

NEW

**HISTORY
of
WAR**

US MILITARY'S GREATEST LEADERS

MEET THE MILITARY HEROES WHO SHAPED
THE WORLD'S LEADING SUPERPOWER



**Digital
Edition**



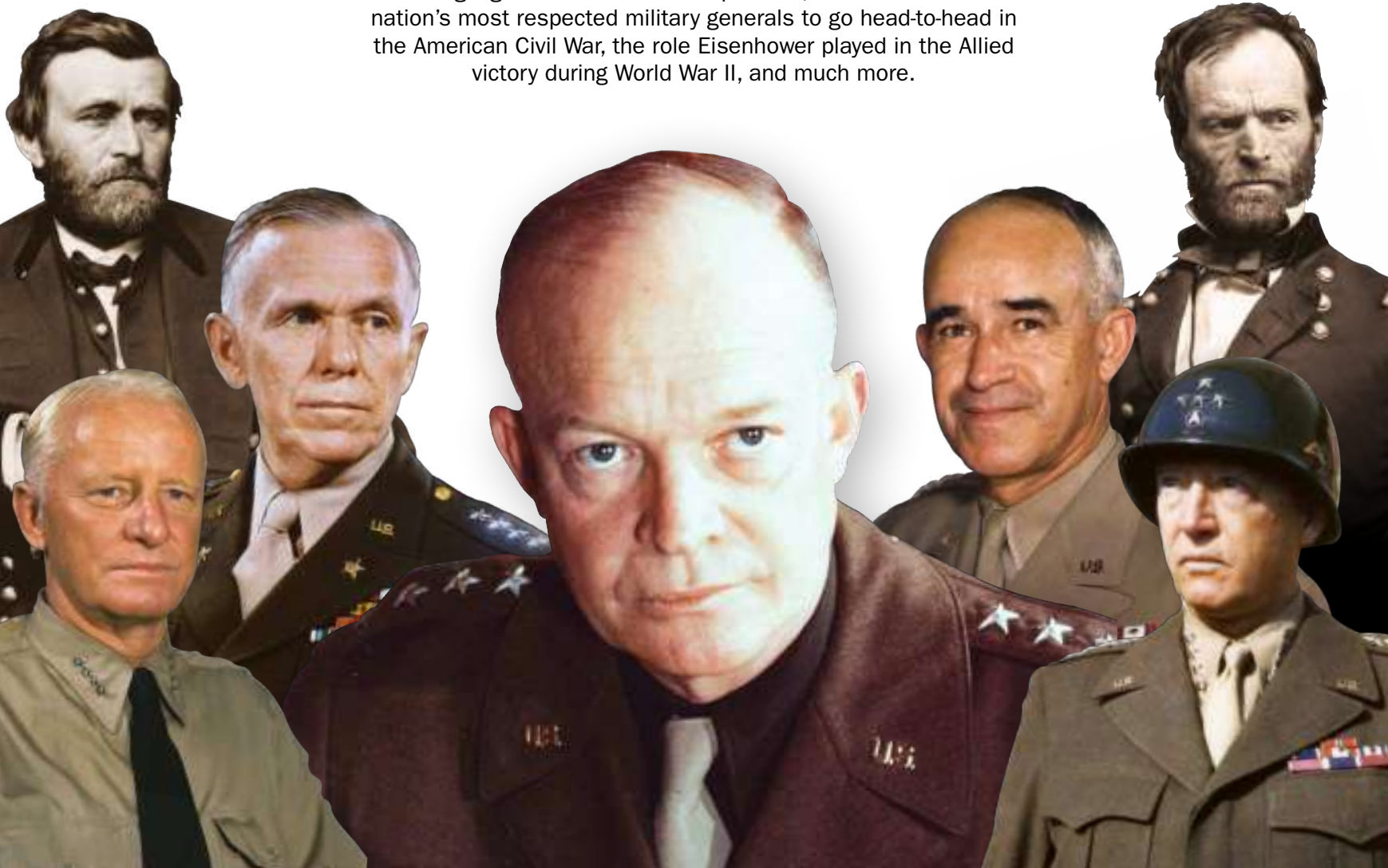
THIRD
EDITION



EISENHOWER ★ WASHINGTON ★ GRANT ★ PATTON

WELCOME TO US MILITARY'S GREATEST LEADERS

From the American Revolution to the World Wars of the 20th century, the history of the United States is marked by conflict and bloodshed. Unsurprisingly, for a nation with such a proud military history, the US has also been responsible for some of the most iconic military leaders and generals in history. In the US Military's Greatest Leaders book, we profile some of the most impressive military minds, fearless warriors, master tacticians and natural-born leaders from over 200 years of warfare. Filled with fascinating insight, in-depth features and battle maps, you'll discover how Washington defeated the British and created the fledgling United States in the process, what led two of the nation's most respected military generals to go head-to-head in the American Civil War, the role Eisenhower played in the Allied victory during World War II, and much more.



「 FUTURE 」

US MILITARY'S GREATEST LEADERS

Future PLC Quay House, The Ambury, Bath, BA1 1UA

Editorial

Editors **Dan Peel & Philippa Grafton**

Designer **Emma Birch**

Compiled by **Alice Barnes-Brown**

Senior Art Editor **Andy Downes**

Head of Art & Design **Greg Whitaker**

Editorial Director **Jon White**

Cover images

Getty

Photography

All copyrights and trademarks are recognised and respected

Advertising

Media packs are available on request

Commercial Director **Clare Dove**

International

Head of Print Licensing **Rachel Shaw**

licensing@futurenet.com

www.futurecontenthub.com

Circulation

Head of Newstrade **Tim Mathers**

Production

Head of Production **Mark Constance**

Production Project Manager **Matthew Eglinton**

Advertising Production Manager **Joanne Crosby**

Digital Editions Controller **Jason Hudson**

Production Managers **Keely Miller, Nola Cokely,**

Vivienne Calvert, Fran Twentyman

Printed by William Gibbons, 26 Planetary Road,
Willenhall, West Midlands, WV13 3XT

Distributed by Marketforce, 5 Churchill Place, Canary Wharf, London, E14 5HU
www.marketforce.co.uk Tel: 0203 787 9001

US Military's Greatest Leaders Third Edition (HOW3195)

© 2021 Future Publishing Limited

We are committed to only using magazine paper which is derived from responsibly managed, certified forestry and chlorine-free manufacture. The paper in this bookazine was sourced and produced from sustainable managed forests, conforming to strict environmental and socioeconomic standards. The paper holds full FSC or PEFC certification and accreditation.

All contents © 2021 Future Publishing Limited or published under licence. All rights reserved. No part of this magazine may be used, stored, transmitted or reproduced in any way without the prior written permission of the publisher. Future Publishing Limited (company number 2008885) is registered in England and Wales. Registered office: Quay House, The Ambury, Bath BA1 1UA. All information contained in this publication is for information only and is, as far as we are aware, correct at the time of going to press. Future cannot accept any responsibility for errors or inaccuracies in such information. You are advised to contact manufacturers and retailers directly with regard to the price of products/services referred to in this publication. Apps and websites mentioned in this publication are not under our control. We are not responsible for their contents or any other changes or updates to them. This magazine is fully independent and not affiliated in any way with the companies mentioned herein.



Future plc is a public
company quoted on the
London Stock Exchange
(symbol: FUTR)
www.futureplc.com

Chief executive **Zillah Byng-Thorne**
Non-executive chairman **Richard Huntingford**
Chief financial officer **Rachel Addison**

Tel +44 (0)1225 442 244

Part of the

HISTORY of WAR

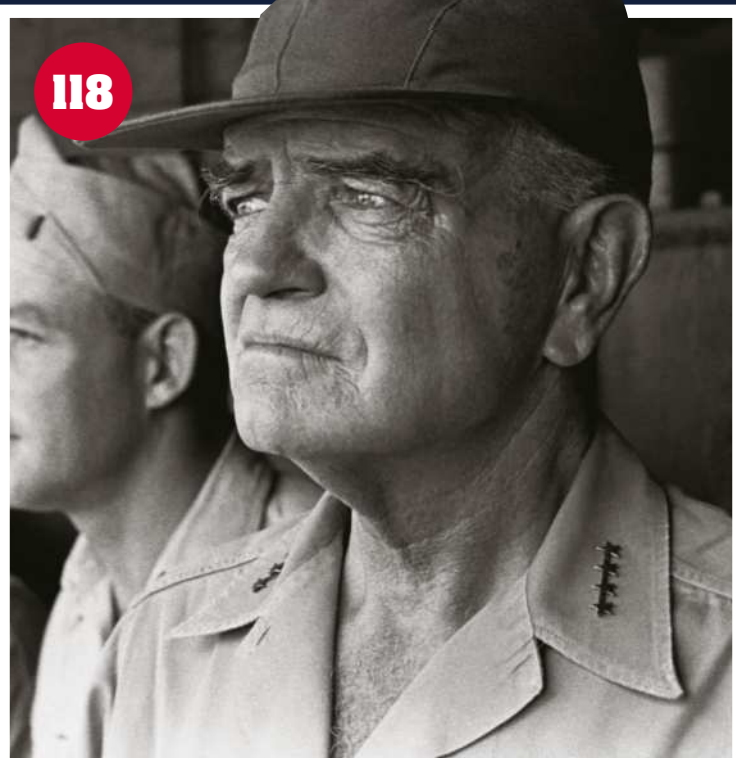
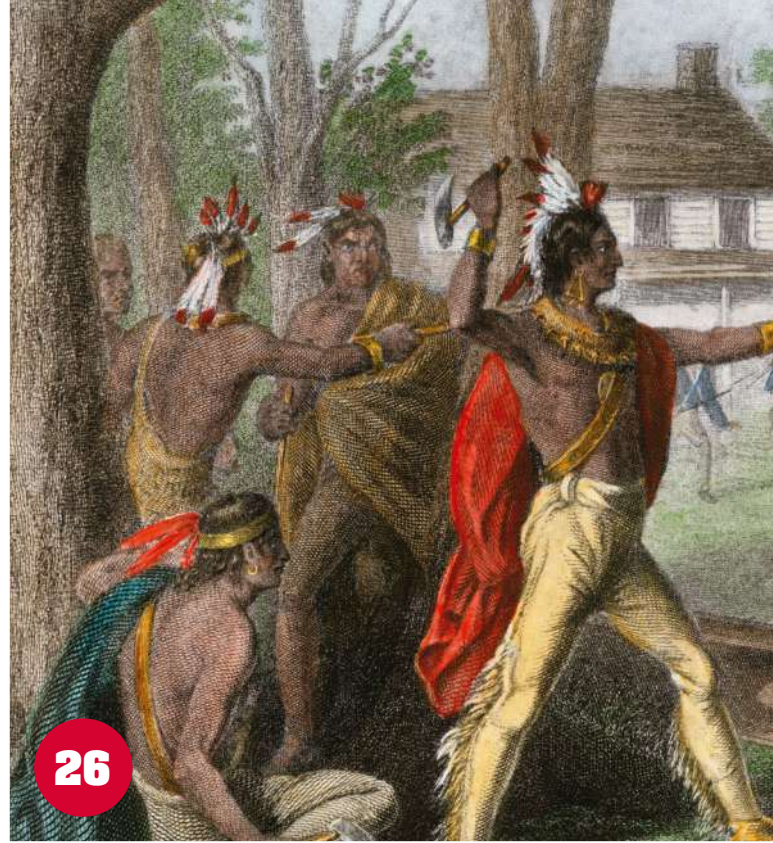
bookazine series™

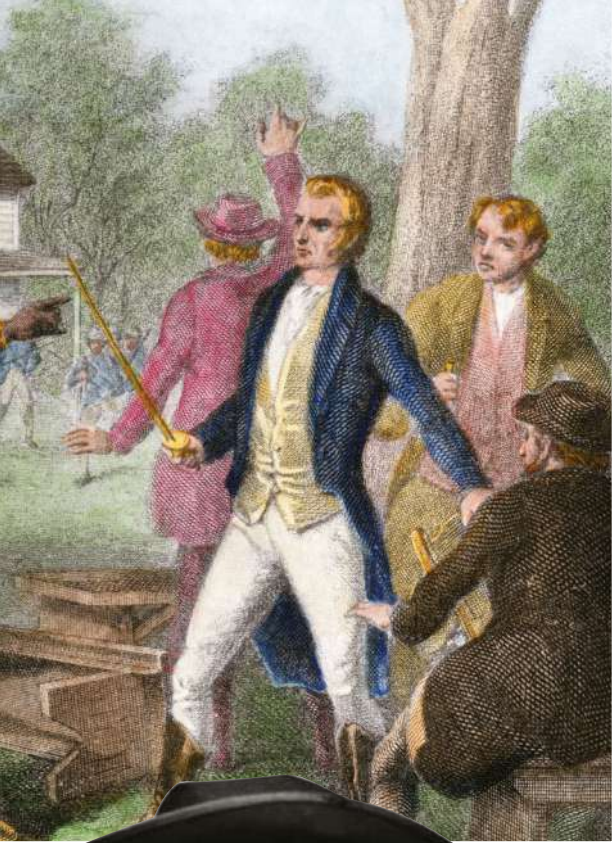


CONTENTS



8	PRESIDENTS AT WAR
14	GEORGE WASHINGTON
22	ANDREW JACKSON
26	TECUMSEH
32	DAVY CROCKETT
36	WINFIELD SCOTT
42	LEE VS GRANT
50	WILLIAM TECUMSEH SHERMAN
56	STONEWALL JACKSON
60	SITTING BULL
64	CUSTER VS CRAZY HORSE
72	WILLIAM SIMS
76	THEODORE ROOSEVELT
82	JOHN J PERSHING
90	DOUGLAS MACARTHUR
96	GEORGE MARSHALL
102	CHESTER NIMITZ
106	GEORGE S PATTON
114	HENRY 'HAP' ARNOLD
118	RAY SPRUANCE
122	DWIGHT EISENHOWER
130	OMAR BRADLEY
134	MATTHEW B RIDGEWAY
138	NORMAN SCHWARZKOPF







FROM SOLDIER TO STATESMAN

From George Washington to George Bush, military experience has always been an important factor in deciding who governs from the White House as commander-in-chief of the United States

The office of President of the United States of America is the most powerful and influential in the world. Democratically elected from potentially 219 million voters, the president's executive role in federal government means that he or she presides over the largest global economy and, perhaps most crucially, is commander-in-chief of the USA's armed forces. The title is no formality and is enshrined in article II, section 2 of the US Constitution that states, "The President shall be commander in chief of the army and navy of the United States, and of the militia of the several states, when called into the actual service of the United States."

When the Constitution was created and ratified between 1787-88, the army, navy and marines were the only military organisations that the president was responsible for but since that time the role has greatly expanded and now includes not just the United States Air Force but also intelligence services and one of the largest arsenals of nuclear weapons in the world. The latter in particular makes the role of president possibly the most responsible job known to mankind and in colloquial terms, the person who has the power to 'push the red button' is theoretically able to cause Armageddon in a single stroke.

With such an emphasis on hard power, it is no coincidence that the role of president is strongly associated with the armed forces and it is reflected in the choice of men (so far) that have been elected to high office. As of 2019, out of 45 presidents only 12 have not seen service in the US military or state militias. Significant non-military presidents include

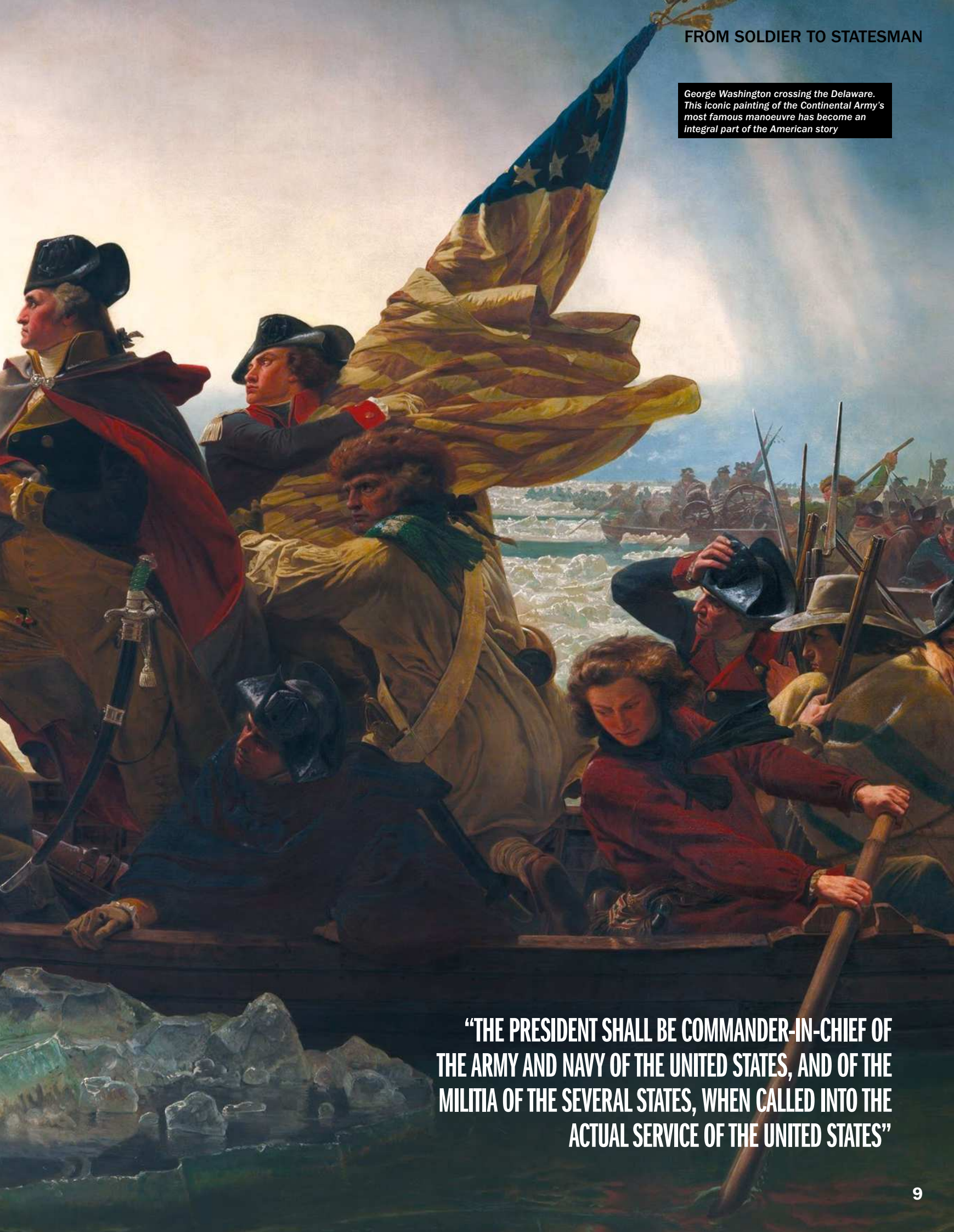
Barack Obama, Bill Clinton, the founding father John Adams and current commander-in-chief Donald Trump.

Remarkably, presidents Woodrow Wilson and Franklin D Roosevelt hold the ironic honour of successfully leading the USA through the world wars despite having no military experience. Nonetheless, the role of previous military service is crucial to the presidential story and is interwoven with conflicts throughout American history. Presidents have served as soldiers in the forefront of every significant war up until 1945, and their successful fighting careers often had a direct bearing on their future electoral victories from the American War of Independence through the Civil War and finally WWII.

In an interesting coincidence there have been no presidents who served in America's most high-profile defeat: the Vietnam War. This anomaly includes distinguished but unsuccessful presidential candidates like John Kerry and John McCain. Success on the battlefield in victorious wars for the USA has been equated to potential presidential achievement and, rightly or wrongly, commanders-in-chief have often been elected on the back of their wartime heroics, regardless of their political and administrative experience or ability.

The stories involved with each military president varies enormously, from saving lives, leading men to victory on the battlefield, winning medals for distinguished service and even commanding whole armies from different nations in complicated coalitions. In many ways, the United States has been forged by war and its presidents have been a critical factor in this part of history both during their terms of office and, most intriguingly, before.

George Washington crossing the Delaware. This iconic painting of the Continental Army's most famous manoeuvre has become an integral part of the American story



“THE PRESIDENT SHALL BE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE ARMY AND NAVY OF THE UNITED STATES, AND OF THE MILITIA OF THE SEVERAL STATES, WHEN CALLED INTO THE ACTUAL SERVICE OF THE UNITED STATES”

George Washington

Years In Service: 1752-83 Presidential Term: 1789-97

Perhaps the most famous, and important, soldier-president was the very first. George Washington's role as commander-in-chief of the rebellious Continental Army during the American War of Independence was decisive in ensuring the colonists' victory against their British masters, and ultimately led to the creation of the United States. Conversely, his actual military career was a curious mix of wavering fortunes and lack of battlefield prowess, combined with a great sense of strategy and a talent for successfully organising a fledgling army.

Washington's military career began in 1752 when, aged only 20, he was made a major in the Virginia militia and gained a reputation for efficiency and courage. By 1754, he was a lieutenant colonel and fought for four years during the French and Indian War for the British, commanding the Virginia Regiment. Although he was known for his courage, Washington was defeated and captured by the French at the Battle of Fort Necessity, and played a controversial role in the British defeat at the Battle of the Monongahela. Despite these setbacks, Washington learned much about British command principles and their operational techniques in America. However, he resented British officers' arrogance towards colonial leaders and refused a commission in the regular British army.

By 1775, Washington was a member of Congress and on 14 June, he was appointed as commander-in-chief of the Continental Army. His task in the upcoming war against the British would be difficult. Although he was experienced by colonial standards,



Washington had only commanded about 2,000 militiamen at most. This was tiny compared to conventional European armies, but he knew British weaknesses fighting in North America and was an imposing commander. His first fighting forays into the war were, nonetheless, almost disastrous.

During the 1776 New York campaign, Washington suffered multiple defeats at Long Island, White Plains and Fort Mifflin. By the end of the year, his army had been chased from New York into New Jersey and Pennsylvania. However, at his lowest ebb, Washington seized the initiative by moving his army and artillery across the Delaware River on 30 December and then defeated the British twice at Trenton and Princeton. These victories boosted colonial morale and impressed the French to enter the war.

Washington's real military achievements were arguably off the battlefield. In an age when disease killed far more than battle-related

injuries, Washington boldly inoculated his army against smallpox in 1777, which reduced his army's deaths from the disease from 17 per cent to one per cent. This was unprecedented in war and it greatly enabled him to maintain numerical strength, but Washington also managed his army despite crippling supply problems by astute delegation. By 1781, he could not properly pay his troops, writing: "We are at the end of our tether," but he had held his army together long enough for French troops to arrive and tip the balance.

At the Siege of Yorktown, a Franco-American army under Washington decisively defeated the British and forced General Cornwallis to surrender along with more than 7,000 of his troops. Yorktown forced the British to negotiate and in 1783, the United States of America became a reality. Six years later, Washington was unanimously elected as the country's first president and commander-in-chief.

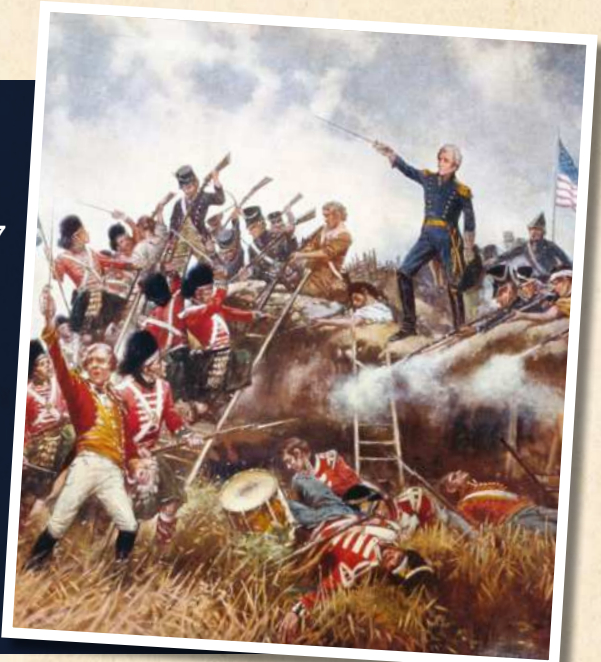
Andrew Jackson

Years In Service: 1812-19 Presidential Term: 1829-1837

Andrew Jackson is the only president to have fought in both the War of Independence and the War of 1812. When he was 13 years old, he joined a local militia as a courier and was captured by the British in 1781, making him the only president to have been a prisoner-of-war. Jackson was left permanently scarred when a British officer slashed his left hand and face after he refused to polish his boots.

Despite a lack of real military experience, Jackson was appointed a major general

during the War of 1812, winning the Battle of Horseshoe Bend in 1814 against Creek Native Americans. He was a popular commander and was known as 'Old Hickory' in reference to being as tough as the deep-rooted tree. His greatest victory came on 8 January 1815 when, despite being outnumbered almost two-to-one, he led 5,000 soldiers to an unexpected victory against the British at the Battle of New Orleans. This was the last major engagement of the war and Jackson became a national hero.





Ulysses S Grant

Years In Service: 1839-1854, 1861-1869

Presidential Term: 1869-77

From humble origins, Grant attended West Point in exchange for a free education and served as a lieutenant during the Mexican-American War (1846-48), a conflict he later viewed as morally dubious. He resigned as a captain in 1854 and subsequently struggled in civilian life. In 1860, he was forced to work in his brother's leather shop but his fortunes dramatically changed when civil war broke out. The north needed experienced officers and Grant rapidly went from being a captain to brigadier general.

In 1861, Grant led troops for the first time at the inconclusive Battle of Belmont, but learned much about Confederate tactics and forced Fort Donelson to surrender in February 1862, earning national praise and a promotion to major general. Although he was sharply criticised for high Union losses at the Battle of Shiloh in April 1862, Grant was kept on for his willingness to fight and his supreme calmness in combat. He was the first Union commander to go on the offensive and came into his own orchestrating the capture of Vicksburg, Mississippi. Grant cut his own supply lines and used enemy resources to feed his troops. After defeating two Confederate armies in five engagements, Vicksburg came under siege and six weeks later, the Southern garrison of more than 27,000 men surrendered on 4 July 1863. This was a crushing victory and President Lincoln declared, "Grant is my man and I am his."

By early 1864, Grant was the top general and Lincoln named him as commander of all Union forces. His relentless tactics led to high losses among northern troops and as a result, he earned the nickname 'The Butcher'. Nevertheless, the south was decimated and on 9 April 1865, General Robert E Lee surrendered to Grant at Appomattox House. This ended the war and Grant was a hero of the Union.

Theodore Roosevelt

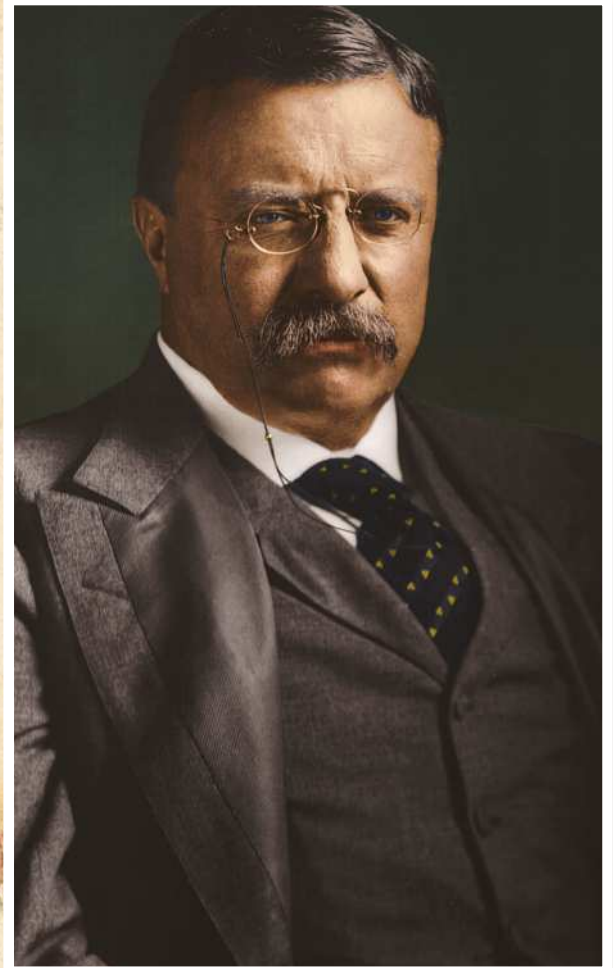
Years In Service: 1882-86, 1898

Presidential Term: 1901-1909

Despite later winning the Nobel Peace Prize as president, Theodore Roosevelt's reputation is based on high adventure and military exploits. He was a keen advocate of exercise and in his spare time keen on outdoor pursuits including horse riding, boxing and wrestling. He was also a frontier sheriff who chased outlaws and hunted grizzly bears.

These vigorous activities made him ideally placed to become a soldier and he had been a lieutenant in the New York National Guard. However, in May 1898 he resigned his post of assistant secretary of the navy and volunteered for service as commander of the 1st US Volunteer Cavalry in order to take part in the Spanish-American War. This unit, better known to history as the 'Rough Riders' was an elite but varied company that comprised of more than 1,000 Ivy League gentlemen, cowboys, prospectors, sheriffs and even singers and Native Americans. The Rough Riders left America and disembarked in Cuba on 22 June 1898 to fight the Spanish.

On 1 July, Roosevelt played a significant role at the Battle of San Juan Hill. Although he had been hit by shrapnel in the wrist, Roosevelt exhorted his troops to support army regulars up Kettle Hill, but he ended up leading the entire advance against well-entrenched Spaniards. When he was 35 metres from the summit of Kettle Hill, Roosevelt dismounted and cut defensive wire before climbing through the fence and taking the hill under heavy fire. Roosevelt then ordered the Rough Riders to charge after the retreating Spanish up the adjacent San Juan Hill. He initially did this almost single-handedly, but the resulting full charge meant that this hill was also taken. It is now agreed that Roosevelt's leadership and courage greatly influenced the victory and sealed his reputation.



PRESIDENTS OF THE AMERICAN CIVIL WAR



Rutherford B Hayes
Years in Service:
 1861-65
Presidential term:
 1877-1881

Hayes served in the 23rd Ohio Infantry for the duration of the conflict. He led troops at the Battle of South Mountain in 1862, where his left arm was fractured by a bullet, and participated in the Valley Campaigns of 1864. During the war, Hayes was also wounded in the knee and shoulder. By 1865, he was a brevet major general and Ulysses S Grant said of Hayes, "His conduct was marked by conspicuous gallantry as well as the display of qualities of a higher order than that of mere personal daring."



James A Garfield
Years in Service:
 1861-63
Presidential term:
 1881

Despite having no military training, Garfield was commissioned as a colonel in the 42nd Ohio Infantry Regiment in August 1861 and was then given the 18th Brigade to drive the Confederates out of eastern Kentucky. He commanded and won a small battle at Middle Creek in 1862 and later participated in the hard-fought Battle of Shiloh and the Siege of Corinth. Health problems restricted Garfield's active service and in 1863, he took a seat in the House of Representatives instead, but ended his war as a major general. Garfield was later assassinated as president after only 200 days in office.



Benjamin Harrison
Years in Service:
 1862-65
Presidential term:
 1889-93

Like Garfield, Harrison had no military experience and joined the US Army in 1862 as a captain, but was quickly promoted to colonel of the 70th Indiana Infantry and spent two years on reconnaissance and guard duty. Circumstances changed in 1864 when Harrison's regiment was posted to the front line in the Atlanta campaign and he was promoted to command a brigade in XX Corps. He then took part in nine battles, including the Battle of Nashville in 1864, and by the end of the war Harrison was a brigadier general.



William McKinley
Years in Service:
 1861-65
Presidential term:
 1897-1901

Uniquely among the Civil War veteran presidents, McKinley volunteered as a private in June 1861 in the 23rd Ohio Infantry and met fellow future commander-in-chief, Rutherford B Hayes. McKinley rose through the ranks first as a quartermaster and then a commissary sergeant. Like Hayes, he fought at the battles of South Mountain and Antietam where his bravery earned him a commission to second lieutenant. McKinley went on to fight at the battles of Kernstown, Berryville, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek and he ended the war as a brevet major. He became the third commander-in-chief to be assassinated when he was shot in 1901.

John F Kennedy

Years In Service: 1941-45 Presidential Term: 1961-63

Kennedy came from a privileged family and when the USA entered WWII he attempted to join the US Navy, but was initially rejected because of his chronic back problems. His influential father managed to get him into the US Naval Reserves and by 1943, he was a lieutenant in charge of a small Patrol Torpedo (PT) boat with 11 crew based in the Solomon Islands. His first combat command was on PT-109. These boats were used to conduct night attacks on Japanese shipping, using high speeds to launch surprise torpedoes and strafe enemy craft with machine guns. Despite this, PT boats were vulnerable to attack and speedy escapes were their best defence.

On the night of 1-2 August 1943, PT-109 was running silent to avoid detection when it was struck by a Japanese destroyer. Travelling at 40 knots, the destroyer cut Kennedy's craft in half and two crew members were killed, while the rest were thrown in the water. Kennedy ordered the PT-109 to be abandoned and gathered the survivors in the water by swimming out and pulling them onto the boat's wreckage. At dawn, Kennedy ordered his men to swim to the nearest island, which was about five kilometres away, and towed one of his wounded sailors with his bare teeth. He repeated this act on another swim to a bigger island and then did a further swim to Nauru with another crew mate to get help. He sent a message carved on a coconut, with an islander, to the nearest American base and Kennedy and his crew were eventually rescued after eight days.

He was subsequently awarded the Navy and Marine Corps medal for lifesaving at sea, as well as a Purple Heart. Kennedy's wartime actions would later benefit his successful 1960 presidential campaign but he downplayed his becoming a hero by saying, "It was involuntary, they sank my boat."



George HW Bush

Years In Service: 1942-45 Presidential Term: 1989-92

Born in 1924, George HW Bush is the last living former president to have seen combat in WWII. He enlisted in the US Navy on his 18th birthday in 1942 and when he became an airman in 1943, he was the service's youngest pilot. He was assigned to the Pacific theatre and flew 58 combat missions during the war aboard USS San Jacinto, flying Grumman TBM Avenger bomber planes.

On 2 September 1944, Bush was ordered to destroy a Japanese radio station in the Bonin Islands, but his aircraft was hit by enemy fire. Although his Avenger was in flames, he continued strafing the target before bailing out close to an island near Iwo Jima. He was shortly rescued by a US submarine and was later awarded the Distinguished Flying Cross for heroism under fire.

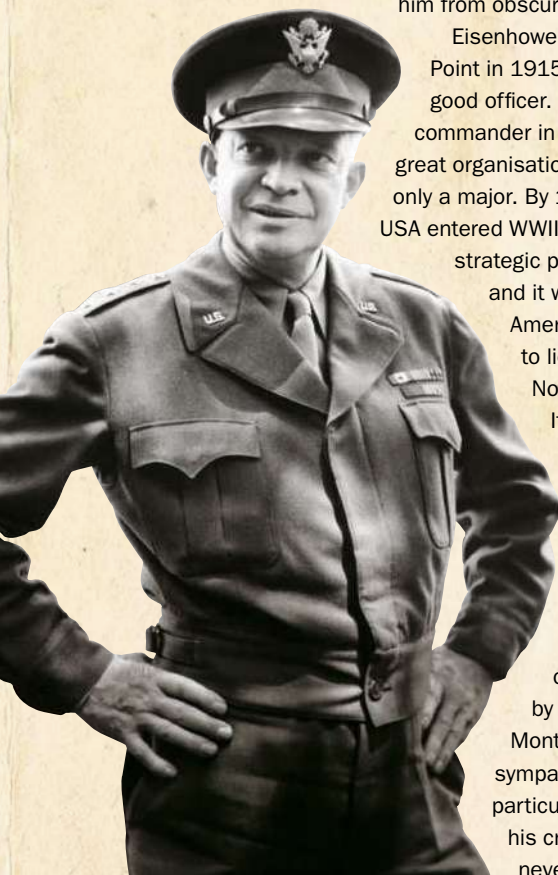


Dwight D Eisenhower

Years In Service: 1911-48, 1950-52

Presidential Term: 1953-61

The election of Dwight D Eisenhower to the presidency in 1953 is the most obvious case of a candidate greatly aided by a glittering military career. However, like Grant before him, 'Ike' was not destined for greatness, let alone the White House, until an emergency plucked him from obscurity.



Eisenhower was an average cadet when he graduated from West Point in 1915 and his teachers only considered him to be a potentially good officer. To his disappointment, he was stationed as a tank corps commander in the USA during WWI. Here he became known for having great organisational skills, but for much of the interwar years he was only a major. By 1941, he was just a colonel, but this changed when the USA entered WWII at the end of the year. Eisenhower had shown great strategic planning in field manoeuvres involving 400,000 troops and it was this that earned him rapid promotions to work on American war plans. By November 1942, he was promoted to lieutenant general, oversaw the Allied Operation Torch in North Africa, and then directed the invasions of Sicily and Italy the following year. His affable and diplomatic nature made him the ideal choice to command Operation Overlord, the official invasion of Europe, and in December 1943, he was appointed as supreme allied commander of the Allied Expeditionary Force (SHAEF).

As well overseeing the liberation of Western Europe and the invasion of Germany, Eisenhower's task was to oversee intense co-operation between 11 Allied countries, particularly Britain, which was often hindered by fractious personalities like George Patton and Bernard Montgomery. It was largely thanks to Eisenhower's tact and sympathy that tensions were overcome and operations, in particular D-Day, were successful. Victory in Europe was largely his creation, so it is ironic that this most powerful of generals never personally saw combat.

Duties of the Commander-In-Chief

Today, the president is always prepared for war and has many military roles to perform away from politics

Today, the responsibilities of commander-in-chief are multi-faceted. Each morning, the president receives a classified presidential daily briefing from his national security advisor, either in person or by tablet. The contents of this brief provides the president with new intelligence and alerts him to possible crises in the world. This briefing forms part of the US Department of Defence, where chiefs of the four armed services all report directly to the president. Despite his powers, the president cannot declare war: the Constitution gives that right to Congress, however, a commander-in-chief can order wartime manoeuvres such as deploying troops and giving permission for air strikes, bombings and invasions.

Ultimately, the president is responsible for preserving peace at home and areas that involve American interests. A president therefore also has the authority to protect US allies and enforce international treaties or call on military forces to quell civil disobedience.

The role is also ceremonial and the president receives troops returning home from military duty. The sitting president can also decide who should be recognised for outstanding service, which includes the awarding of the prestigious Medal of Honor.

PRESIDENTS OF THE WORLD WARS



Harry S Truman
Years In Service:
1905-11
Presidential Term:
1945-53

Truman was the only president to have seen combat in WWI. After serving in the Missouri National Guard between 1905-11, he rejoined his unit in 1917 when America joined the conflict. Promoted to captain, he commanded Battery D of 129th field artillery and was shipped to France. His battery had a reputation for being unruly, but Truman turned it into an effective force. He first saw action in the Vosges mountains in August 1918, and then the Meuse-Argonne Offensive during September-October 1918.



Lyndon B Johnson
Years In Service:
1940-64
Presidential Term:
1963-1969

Congressman Johnson became a lieutenant commander in the US Naval Reserve in June 1940, aged 32. He spent six months in the Pacific theatre, primarily as a congressional inspector of the war's progress in the region. While he was stationed in Australasia, he worked as an observer on bomber missions in the South Pacific. Johnson's only combat action occurred on 9 June 1942, when he volunteered as an observer on an airstrike mission over New Guinea by 11 B-26 bombers. He came under heavy fire and an engine failed, which forced the aircraft to return to base.



Richard Nixon
Years In Service:
1942-66
Presidential Term:
1969-74

Nixon joined the US Naval Reserve on 15 June 1942, which for him personally was a surprising move. He was born and brought up as a Quaker and as such could claim exemption from military service. But instead of exploiting this, Nixon voluntarily enlisted and was commissioned as a lieutenant. He served as a transport officer in the South West Pacific theatre during WWII and although he saw no combat, he was recognised for his good service and received letters of commendation as well as medals.



Gerald Ford
Years In Service:
1942-46
Presidential Term:
1974-77

Gerald Ford joined the US Naval Reserve in 1942 and the following year he was promoted to lieutenant. He was assigned to the new aircraft carrier USS Monterey, with roles as an assistant navigator and antiaircraft battery officer. Between 1943-44, Ford and the Monterey took part in many actions in the Pacific assisting in carrier strikes, supporting island landings and the Battle of Philippine Sea. On one occasion, Monterey was caught in a typhoon in December 1944 and the ship rolled 25 degrees, causing Ford to lose his footing and slide towards edge of the deck. Ford managed to hold on to steel ridge on the edge of the carrier.

GEORGE WASHINGTON





GEORGE WASHINGTON

THE FIRST PRESIDENT

Today George Washington is hailed as the father of the USA, but his journey to legendary hero was a perilous and difficult one

YEARS ACTIVE: 1775-1783
CONFLICTS: AMERICAN REVOLUTION
RANK: COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF

Born on 22 February 1732, George Washington was the son of a slave-owning tobacco planter. George received a mixed education from a variety of tutors, and plans for him to join the British Royal Navy were cut short when his mother objected. Fate instead led Washington to become a surveyor, and he travelled for two years surveying land in the Culpeper, Frederick and Augusta counties. This position began a lifelong interest in landholdings, and he purchased his first piece of land as soon as his sizable income filled his pockets. And when his older brother died in 1752, Washington inherited not only his father's vast lands, but also the position of major in the Virginia militia.

It would not be long until Washington's natural leadership and drive would send him straight into the heat of battle. At a staggering 188 centimetres (6'2") tall, the young man towered above his contemporaries, and Virginia's Lieutenant General Robert Dinwiddie saw fit to use his imposing but inspiring nature to try to persuade the French to remove themselves from land claimed by Britain. When they refused, Washington returned with a small

force and attacked the French post at Fort Duquesne, killing the commander and nine men and taking the others as prisoners, all in 15 minutes. The event had huge international implications, and Great Britain and France began to pump forces into North America – The French and Indian War had begun. In a matter of minutes the name Washington became synonymous with three things – bravery, daring and recklessness.

Washington was rewarded for his quick thinking by being appointed commander in chief and colonel of the Virginia Regiment, the first full-time American military unit.

With command of over a thousand soldiers, Washington was tasked with defending Virginia's frontier, and he demonstrated his resolve and forthright approach as his unit engaged in 20 battles over 12 months. But his reckless attitude and inexperience was soon demonstrated when his unit exchanged friendly fire with another British force, killing 14 men.

His time commanding an army had taught Washington many things – how to bring the best out of his men, the importance of stamina and bravery, as well as discipline and training. It had also given him valuable insight into the British military tactics, and his struggles in dealing with government officials convinced him that a national government was the only way forward. However, when Washington retired from service in 1758, as far as he was concerned his time on the battlefield was over.

In 1759 Washington married the intelligent and wealthy Martha Dandridge Custis and together with her two children they moved to the plantation of Mount Vernon. Enjoying the newly inherited wealth from his marriage, Washington was now one of Virginia's wealthiest men and he concentrated on expanding and making the most out of his plantation. Little did he know that revolution was bubbling, and soon he would find himself back on the battlefield in what would become the most famous war in American history.

“WASHINGTON INHERITED NOT ONLY HIS FATHER'S VAST LANDS, BUT ALSO THE POSITION OF MAJOR IN THE VIRGINIA MILITIA”



MAKING HISTORY

3 reasons why Washington is considered the USA's greatest leader

Virtue

Washington twice gave up the chance of ultimate power. First at the end of the Revolutionary War when he surrendered his role as commander in chief, and again when he refused to rule as president for a third term. When George III was presented with the idea of Washington doing this, he said, "If he does that he will be the greatest man in the world."

Commitment to country

Washington did not become involved in the hostile arguments and squabbling of political debates, but instead acted as a peacekeeper between the groups. A true non-partisan, his primary aim was always the betterment of the country, rather than any personal gain.

Persistence

Washington was not the most gifted military leader; he suffered multiple losses and personal humiliations, but his determination to persevere in spite of repeated setbacks inspired his soldiers to do the same, which resulted in him creating one of the most celebrated underdog success stories in world history.

Washington wasn't the most likely of revolutionary leaders; although he opposed the controversial Stamp Act of 1765, during the early stirrings of revolution he was actually opposed to the colonies declaring independence. It wasn't until the passing of the Townshend acts of 1767 that he took an active role in the resistance. In an act of rebellion he encouraged the people of Virginia to boycott English goods until the acts were repealed.

However, when the Intolerable acts were passed in 1774, Washington decided that more forthright action needed to be taken.

Passionate and charismatic, Washington was an obvious choice to attend the First Continental Congress. Although the delegates appealed to the crown to revoke the intolerable acts, they didn't even make a dink in the steely British armour, and a Second Continental Congress was called the following year.

A lot had changed in a year, and Washington too had undergone something of a transformation. The battles at Lexington and Concord had shown the colonies that they were capable of taking on the might of the British, and when Washington arrived in Pennsylvania for the state meeting dressed head to toe in military gear, it sent a strong message: he was prepared for war. So was Congress. It formed the Continental Army on 14 June 1775 and it needed a leader. Reluctant and somewhat modest, Washington did not see himself as a leader capable of leading such a vitally important force, but for those around him there was no other choice. With proven military experience, a devoted patriot and a strong, commanding presence, Washington was appointed commander in chief of the force that would take on the mightiest nation on Earth.

It did not take long for the new commander to prove his worth. In March 1776, Washington turned the Siege of Boston around by placing artillery on Dorchester Heights, low hills with a good view of Boston and its harbour. The perfectly placed, powerful cannons forced the British to retreat from the city, and Washington moved his army into New York City. Even the critical British papers couldn't deny the skills



Young Washington

of the captivating new leader who seemed capable of repelling their empire with ease.

Victory and gossip aside, in truth Washington was out of his depth. He had commanded men before, but only a force of a thousand soldiers – far from the tens of thousands at his disposal now. He had only fought in frontier warfare, far removed from the open-field battles he now faced. He had never commanded legions of cavalry or artillery – he was constantly learning on the job. Washington had to rely on his own intelligence and courage to have any



TIMELINE



● French and Indian War

The French and Indian War was part of a much longer conflict between Great Britain and France, known as the Seven Years War. The war was fought in the north of North America between the colonies of the two powers, ending with France losing its territory in North America. However, funding the war created a huge national debt in Britain and gave France a good reason to support American independence.

1754-1763



● Stamp Act

The resulting national debt of the Seven Years War in Britain had reached £130 million by 1764. Britain also needed a way to pay for its army in North America and decided the colonies should subsidise it. The Stamp Act forced citizens to pay taxes on documents and paper goods and was immediately unpopular as it was carried out without any consent. The outrage soon turned violent and the tax was never collected.

1765



● Townshend Acts

The Townshend Acts were a series of acts passed by the British Parliament upon the colonies in North America. These acts placed duties on vital, high-volume imported items such as glass, paints, paper and tea, among other things. The money raised was intended to pay to keep governors and judges loyal, and also to set a general precedent that the British had the right to tax the American colonies.

1767-1770



● Boston Massacre

This incident occurred when a heckling crowd gathered around a British guard, who was quickly joined by eight more British soldiers. The soldiers fired at the crowd, killing three people and wounding multiple others. Two more later died of their wounds. The soldiers were arrested for manslaughter but were released without charge. This event helped to create an immensely anti-British sentiment in the colonies.

1770



George Washington fought with the British in the assault on the French-held Fort Duquesne

hope of snatching victory from his seasoned, experienced rivals.

This inexperience manifested itself in the crippling defeat the commander suffered during the Battle of Long Island. In an effort to seize New York, the British general William Howe unleashed a devastating campaign that Washington failed to subdue. So great was the British attack that Washington was forced to retreat his entire army across the East River under cover of darkness. Although this feat itself was remarkable, for the self-critical leader it was a swift and brutal reminder of his own inadequacies as a general, and he quickly realised this war would not be easily won.



An illustration of Washington's home in Mount Vernon



● Boston Tea Party

In an effort to force the colonies to accept the Townshend duty on Tea, Britain passed the Tea Act, allowing the East India Company to ship its tea to North America. In defiance, protestors boarded the ships and threw chests full of tea into Boston Harbour. Parliament responded harshly, by passing the Intolerable Acts, which took away the rights of the state of Massachusetts to govern itself.

1773



● First Continental Congress

Delegates from 12 of the 13 British colonies in America met at Carpenters' Hall in Philadelphia to discuss ways to halt the Intolerable Acts. They made plans to refuse to import British goods until their grievances were met. When these efforts proved unsuccessful, a Second Continental Congress was held the next year to prepare the country for the impending American Revolutionary War.

1774



● The Battles of Lexington and Concord

When American intelligence learned that British troops planned to march on Concord, they were quick to assemble their forces and take up arms against them. However only 77 militiamen faced 700 British at Lexington and were quickly defeated. The British continued to Concord to search for arms, but they were forced back by 500 militiamen, winning the colonies their first war victory.

1775



● Battle of Bunker Hill

Set during the Siege of Boston, this battle saw the British mount an attack against the colonial troops stationed in Bunker Hill and Breed's Hill. Although the British were victorious, the heavy losses suffered by the redcoats led it to be a hollow victory, and it proved the Americans could hold their own against their foes in battle. Shortly after the conflict, King George III officially declared the colonies to be in a state of rebellion.

1775

★★★ REBELS

Organisation

There were 35,000 Continentals in the United States with 44,500 militia. Their French allies increased their numbers with 12,000 French soldiers in America and 63,000 at Gibraltar. They also had 53 ships in service throughout the war. George Washington was commander in chief and Nathanael Greene served as major general.

Weapons

When the war began the colonies did not have a professional standing army of any kind, with many colonies only able to supply minutemen who were required to equip themselves – with most carrying rifles. The army's weapon of choice was the flintlock musket and they also carried bayonets.

Resources

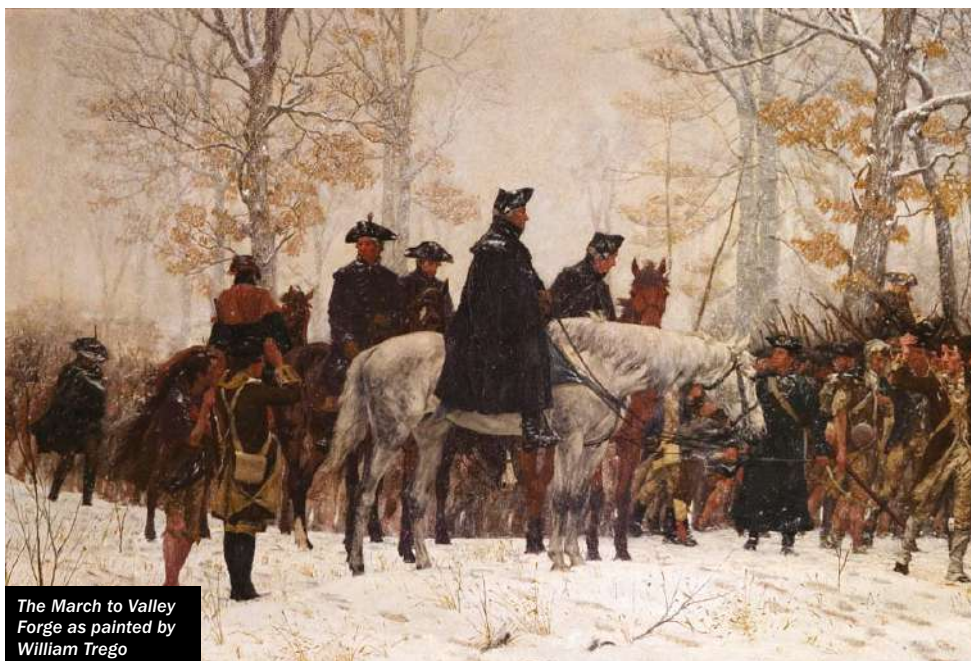
The Continental Army suffered from massive supply issues. Supplies were repeatedly seized by British patrols. They also had to combat a primitive road system, which resulted in regular shortages of food, clothing, ammunition, tents and a host of essential military equipment, constantly pitching the odds against them.

Morale

The rebels' greatest weapon was the belief in their grand cause – fighting for their liberty from the oppressive British Crown. It was this strong morale belief in their cause that encouraged American leaders, who knew they were facing a well equipped and disciplined foe, to push on despite multiple crippling defeats.



But the British had a crippling weakness, too. They were simply too sure they were going to win. Howe so fatally underestimated the will of the American troops and their reckless leader that he left his Hessian soldiers at Trenton, confident the war would be won in the next few months. Washington, on the other hand, was acutely aware of the morale of his



The March to Valley Forge as painted by William Trego



Troops huddle together in the cold at Valley Forge

“WHEN WASHINGTON RETIRED FROM SERVICE IN 1758, AS FAR AS HE WAS CONCERNED, HIS TIME ON THE BATTLEFIELD WAS OVER”

soldiers. After the defeat in New York and the humiliating retreat, they needed something positive to inspire them, and Trenton was right there for the taking.

The plan was one only Washington could have thought up – bold, gutsy and downright dangerous, he led his soldiers across the perilous and icy Delaware River on a freezing Boxing Day in 1776. Only 2,400 of his men were able to make it across without turning back, but it was enough. Completely unprepared for the attack, the Hessians at Trenton were overwhelmed and swiftly defeated by Washington and his men. A few days later the commander led a counter-attack on a British force sent to attack his army

at Princeton, achieving another small – but essential – American victory.

Meanwhile, the British redcoats still believed the rebellion could be stopped like a cork in a bottle. Howe thought that by taking control of key colonial cities, the river of rebellion would turn into a drought and the population would surrender to British rule. When Howe set his sights on the revolutionary hub of Philadelphia, Washington rode out to meet him, but, perhaps with his previous victories clouding his judgement, the commander was outmatched and Philadelphia fell to the British. However, the colonists' cause received a major boon when British General Burgoyne was forced to surrender his entire army of 6,300 men at the



Washington and his men
crossing the Delaware River

Battle of Saratoga. It seemed that major world players were finally beginning to believe the Americans had a chance of besting the mighty British Empire, and France openly allied itself with the rebels.

While General Howe concentrated on capturing key cities, Washington had a revelation. Although individual battles were important, the key to victory was not military success, but instead his ability to keep the heart of the resistance alive and pumping. This was something out of British hands and solely in his own.

This spirit of rebellion faced its most challenging obstacle yet over the long winter of 1777. For six long months the soldiers at the military camp of Valley Forge suffered thousands of disease-ridden deaths. With starvation rife and supplies low, many feared the horrendous conditions would force the desperate army to mutiny. Washington himself faced immense criticism from the American public and Congress, who urged him to hurry the war effort, while behind the scenes anti-Washington movements gained ground. Washington simply replied: "Whenever the public gets dissatisfied with my service [...] I shall quit the helm [...] and retire to a private life." The critics soon fell silent.

Although the conditions had been testing, to put it mildly, the soldiers emerged from

the winter in good spirits. Washington demonstrated that his sting was stronger than ever when his forces attacked the British flank attempting to leave Monmouth Courthouse.

Although the battle ultimately ended in a stalemate, Washington had finally achieved what he set out to do since the beginning of the war – hold his own in a pitched battle. This was massive for the Americans; it proved the growing Continental Army was developing its skills at an alarming speed, and if the horrendous winter that they had emerged from had not crushed them, what chance did the British have?

The French seemed to share this attitude. On 5 September 1781, 24 French ships emerged victorious against 19 British vessels at the Battle of Chesapeake. The success prevented the British from reinforcing the troops of Lord Cornwallis, who was blockaded in Yorktown, Virginia, and allowed crucial French troops to pour into the Continental Army, bringing vast supplies of artillery with them. This was exactly the opportunity Washington needed, and he didn't plan to let it go to waste.

With the British army trapped and exposed, and his own swelling in size, Washington led his men out of Williamsburg and surrounded Yorktown. From late-September the Continental Army moved steadily closer to the redcoats, forcing them to pull back from their outer

★ ★ ★ REDCOATS

Organisation

There were 56,000 British redcoats in North America along with a combined force of 52,000 loyalists, freed slaves and natives. They also had 78 Royal Navy ships at their service. William Howe served as commander in chief, but there were many decorated generals and officers such as Thomas Gage and Henry Clinton.

Weapons

The British army depended on the .75-calibre flintlock musket popularly known as "Brown Bess." They also carried bayonets and, occasionally, short-barrel muskets. The redcoats also used cannons to great effect, to the degree that if an American unit was without cannon, they would not face a cannon-supported British troop.

Resources

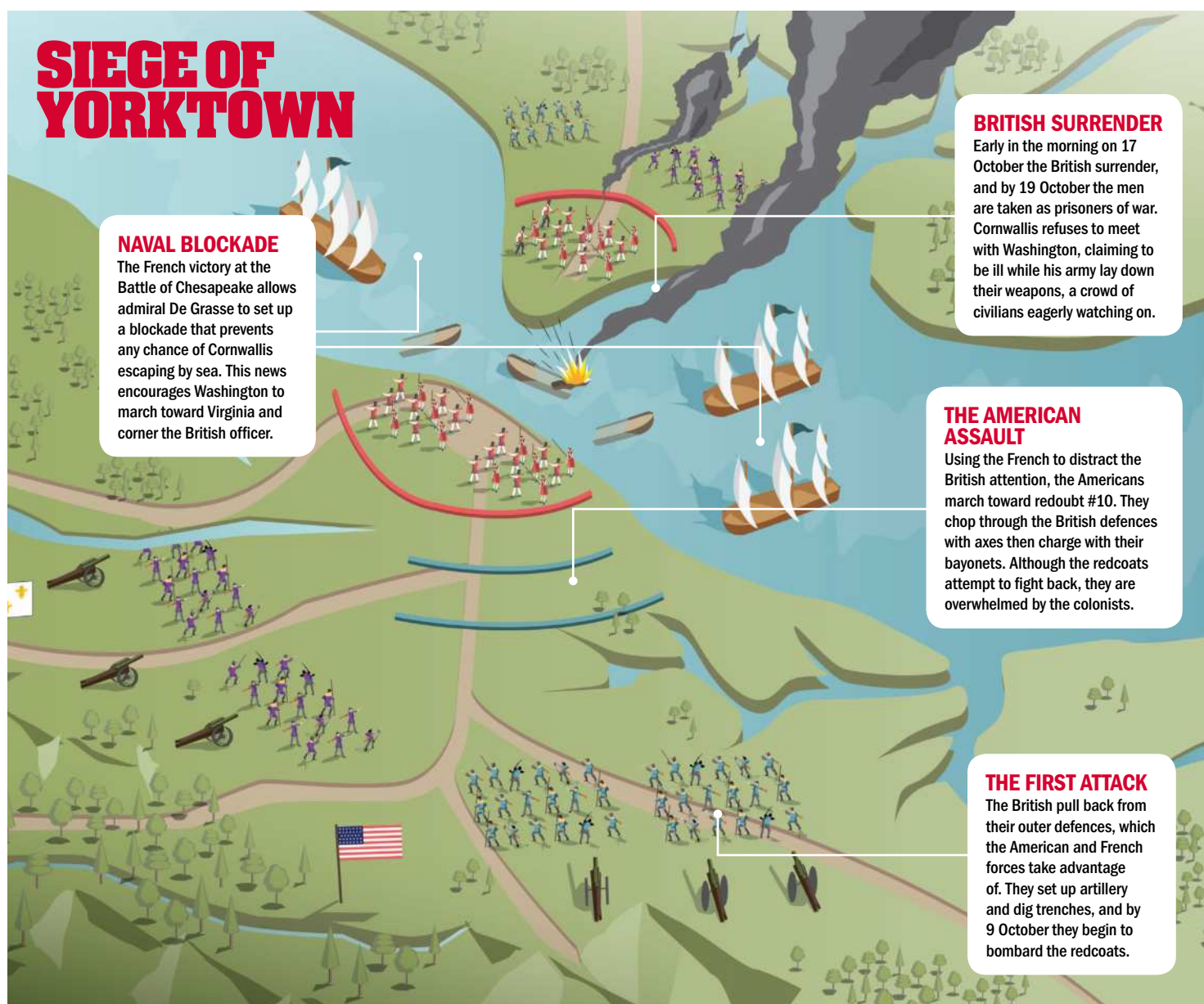
Although British soldiers were better equipped than their American counterparts, they were fighting away from home, and supplies could take months to reach their destinations. Many British had to rely on loyal locals supplying them with food and praying the vital supplies would survive the 4,800km (3,000mi) trip across the ocean.

Morale

The British believed they could easily steamroll the rebels and this underestimation of their foe cost them dearly. The war was also expensive, and support at home was mixed at best. For many soldiers struggling in terrible conditions away from home, there was little motivation to fight.



defences, which left them open for the Americans and French to use. As the colonists began to set up artilleries, the British pelted them with steady fire. In spite of this and at some great risk to himself, Washington continued to visit and motivate his men on the front line, and by 5 October the commander was ready to make his move.



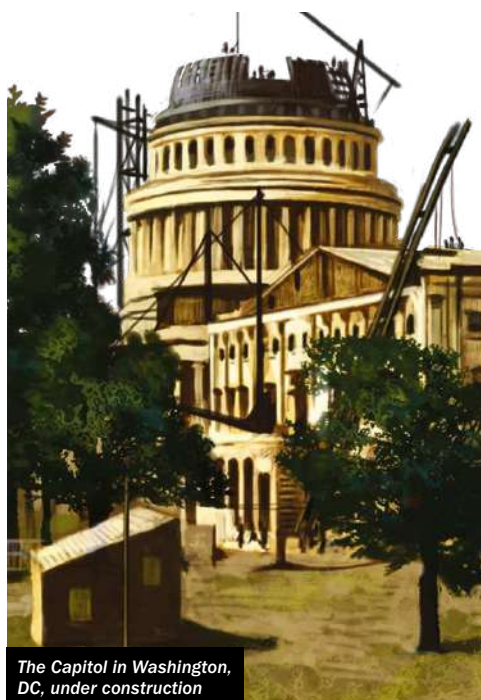
VALLEY FORGE

Pennsylvania, 28 January 1777

The cold today was worse than it has ever been. The crowded wooden huts provide shelter from the biting wind, but the cold passes between the slats, through my threadbare shirt and nestles in my bones. My quest to procure a set of shoes continues to be unsuccessful.

I thought that after marching through the snow in bare feet someone would take pity on me – but there are no supplies coming. The food too is running low. For the past week I have only eaten firecake – a sticky, bland abomination of water and flour that fills my stomach but leaves the soul ravenous.

I shouldn't complain – I am one of the lucky few untouched by the diseases that ravage the camp. So many men have been plagued by itchy rashes and blisters or fevers that refuse to calm. The only relief here are the brave few women who wash and mend our uniforms, or sometimes simply provide a shoulder to men who have no will to go on.



As a vicious storm raged, Washington grasped his pickaxe in his hand and struck several blows into the dirt that would become the new trench the Americans would use to bombard the British. By 5pm on 9 October, the Americans were pelting the British with a relentless stream of cannon fire. The British ships were sunk and soldiers deserted en masse. More American trenches were dug as they gained land, and when Washington's men rushed toward the British redoubt, they overwhelmed the surprised redcoats. As Washington rained artillery fire down on the town, Cornwallis's attempts at escape across the York River were unsuccessful and he finally surrendered to his foe.

Little did Washington know that the victory he had secured at Yorktown would lead to the ultimate surrender of British hostilities, the end of the war and ultimately American freedom. On 3 September 1783 the Treaty of Paris was signed between representatives of

both countries, which proclaimed that Britain recognised the independence of the United States. With victory declared, Washington disbanded his army and wished farewell to the men who had valued him not only as a leader, but also a fellow soldier. On 23 December 1783, in an action that would define him in the history books, he resigned as commander in chief of the army and humbly returned to his home in Mount Vernon.

However, without him his country was struggling. With nobody to unite them the states fought and squabbled among themselves over boundaries and inflicted harsh taxes on their own citizens. The ex-commander watched from afar as the land he had led to freedom struggled to support itself. He was dismayed, but hesitant to act.

It wasn't until an armed uprising known as Shays' Rebellion took place in Massachusetts that Washington was finally persuaded to step into the limelight once more.

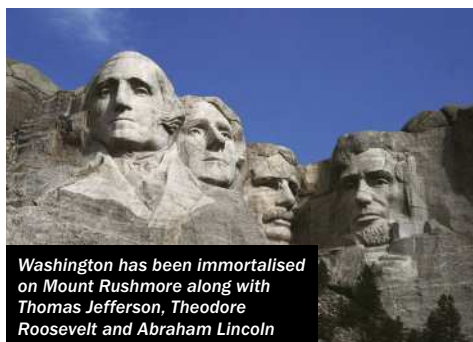
Washington quietly attended the Constitution Convention held in Philadelphia in 1787. There he sat and listened silently to the proceedings, speaking only once. However, his prestige spoke volumes and those gathered there agreed the national government needed more authority – it needed a figure strong and commanding enough to maintain control. Washington was unanimously chosen to fulfil this role. He became president of the convention in 1787, and by 1789 he was unanimously elected once more, but this time as the first-ever president of the United States – the only one in history to receive 100 per

cent of the votes. He would serve two terms as president from 1789 to 1797 until he would yet again relinquish the power he could so easily have exploited. In the spring of 1797, he finally returned to his precious Mount Vernon, realising, perhaps more so than any one of the many people who supported him, that ultimate power in the land of the free could not lay solely in one man's hands indefinitely.

“WASHINGTON DID NOT SEE HIMSELF AS A LEADER CAPABLE OF LEADING SUCH A VITALLY IMPORTANT FORCE”



Washington greets Lafayette



Washington has been immortalised on Mount Rushmore along with Thomas Jefferson, Theodore Roosevelt and Abraham Lincoln



A depiction of Washington's entry into New York in 1789



WASHINGTON MYTHS CUT DOWN

We get an expert opinion on the myths surrounding this legendary man



Stephen Brumwell is a freelance writer and independent historian living in Amsterdam. His book, *George Washington: Gentleman Warrior*, won the 2013 George Washington Book Prize.

He had wooden teeth

George Washington was plagued with dental problems from his twenties, and by 1789, had just one of his own teeth remaining. He owned several sets of false teeth, but none was crafted from wood. Instead, Washington's dentures incorporated a variety of materials – bone, 'sea-horse', or hippopotamus ivory, and human teeth – fixed by lead, gold and metal wire. The belief that Washington's false teeth were wooden probably originated in the brown-stained appearance of surviving examples – apparently owing to his fondness for port wine.

He cut down a cherry tree and confessed to his father

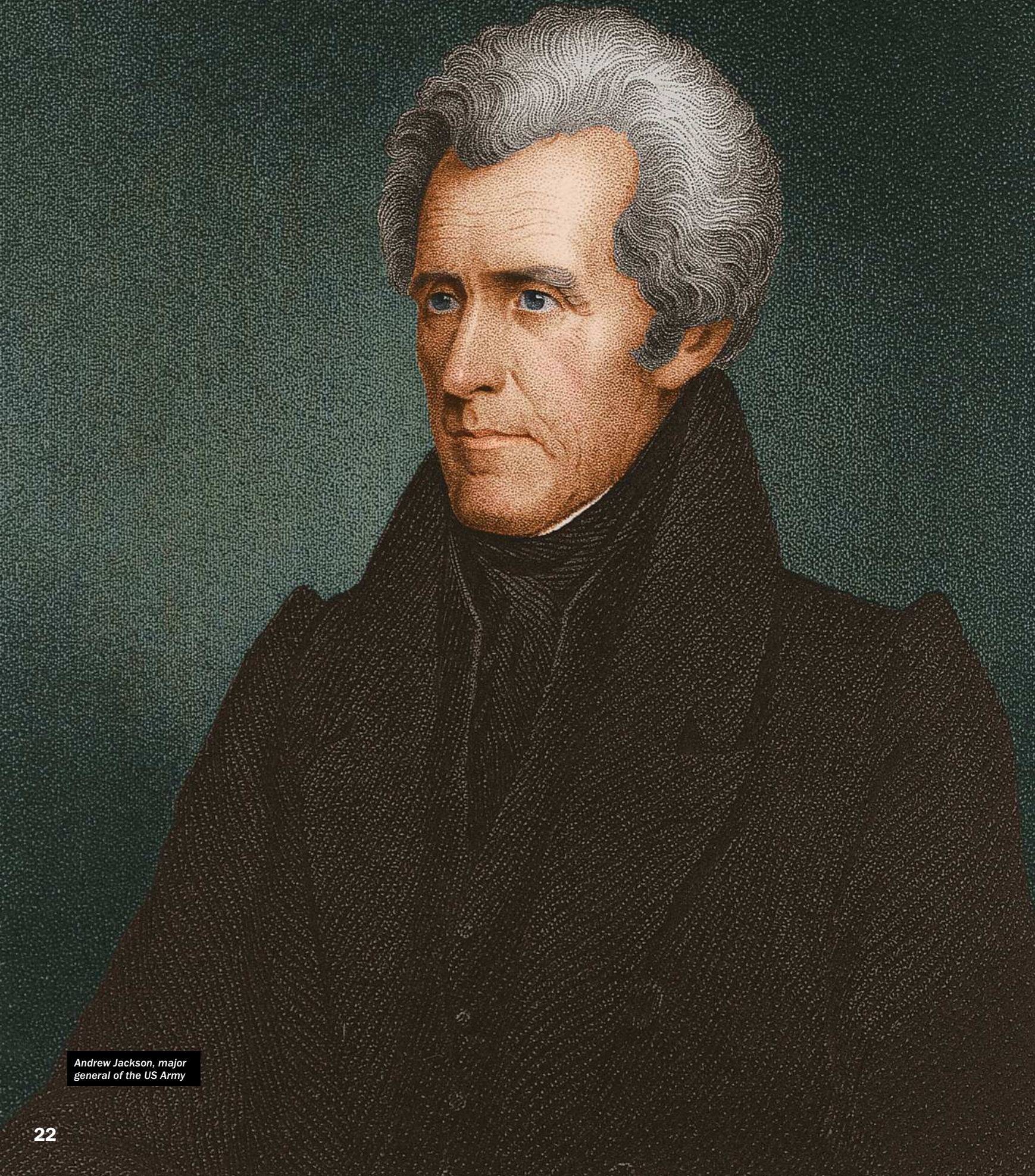
Perhaps the best known of all the legends spun around Washington, the 'cherry tree story' first surfaced in a biography written after his death by Mason Locke Weems. Concerned with portraying Washington as an exemplary role model for his countrymen, 'Parson Weems' concocted the fable of the six-year-old hatcheting his father's prized cherry tree, and then deflecting parental wrath by frankly confessing to the deed with the words "I can't tell a lie, Pa."

He threw a silver dollar across the Potomac River

Standing 188cm (6'2") tall, and with a well-muscled physique, young George Washington was renowned for his strength. Yet even Washington in his prime would have struggled to hurl a silver dollar across the Potomac River, which is more than 1.6km (1mi) wide opposite his Virginian home at Mount Vernon. Also, silver dollars were only introduced in 1794, when Washington was already in his sixties.

He wore a wig

Although wigs were fashionable during Washington's lifetime, he never wore one, preferring to keep his own hair, which was reddish-brown, long and tied back in a tight queue, or 'pigtail'. However, Washington regularly used the white hair powder that was customary among men of his wealthy social class, especially for formal occasions, and this gave the impression of a wig, apparent in many of his portraits.



Andrew Jackson, major
general of the US Army



ANDREW JACKSON

OLD HICKORY

Andrew Jackson was an implacable and ferocious frontier fighter who battled his nation's enemies since childhood

YEARS ACTIVE: 1780-1821
CONFLICTS: AMERICAN WAR OF INDEPENDENCE, CREEK WAR, WAR OF 1812, FIRST SEMINOLE WAR
RANK: MAJOR GENERAL

A man of the wide-open western frontier, Andrew Jackson was a new breed of American, one that the Founding Fathers, mainly well-educated gentlemen of leisure, would not have approved of. He was born in 1767, with Scotch-Irish ancestry, into rural poverty in the American 'backcountry' of Waxhaws, South Carolina. A rugged community from Ulster in Ireland, having previously decamped from Scotland, the Scotch-Irish settlers of the region brought with them a reputation for defying authority and being ready and willing to fight all comers. Jackson would grow up to be a representative son of that reputation. From an early age he happily fought just about anyone who insulted or troubled him, being a boy with a quick and violent temper.

Jackson had also learned to hate the Native Americans, or Indians, as they were then called, who lived all around. White American settlers feared the Natives, who in turn understandably mistrusted and disliked the newcomers entering their land. Indeed, it is believed that one of Jackson's own relatives perished at Native American hands. He would never trust them and believed that settlers needed to

always be on their guard. His lifetime attitude towards the Natives would be one of hostility.

The American War of Independence came in 1775, with many Americans taking up arms against King George III of Britain. The settlers of the area were caught between the Natives, who regularly raided them, and the British and Loyalist American auxiliaries, who also used terror tactics. Jackson's eldest brother, Hugh, died in a battle with the British in 1779.

At Waxhaws on 29 May 1780 when Jackson was aged just 13, an American force of Continental Army regulars was cut down by a Loyalist force, led by the infamous Lieutenant Colonel Banastre Tarleton of the British Army, as they attempted to surrender. The 'Waxhaws Massacre' spurred Jackson and his older brother Robert to join the local Patriot militia. The next year, however, they were captured. He was ordered to clean a British officer's boots, but the ever-defiant Jackson refused and the officer struck him with his sword. The boy blocked the blow, but was left with scars on his hand and forehead. As a result, he would also retain a lifelong hatred of the British.

Both boys came down with smallpox, a common and deadly scourge of the day. Robert

and Jackson were released to their mother in a prisoner swap, but Robert died not long afterward. Jackson lived, but his mother, who volunteered to nurse Americans in Charleston, South Carolina, contracted cholera and also died. Jackson was now alone and on his own. He next studied law under the tutelage of a prominent attorney in North Carolina and began practicing in 1787. He moved to Nashville, Tennessee on the American frontier, where he established his own law practice. It was in Nashville that he met and married his beloved wife, Rachel Donelson Robards. He also took part in fighting against the local Native Americans, such as the Cherokees.

Jackson was a notably good leader of men, and some of this may be attributed to his legendary ability to use profanity with his soldiers, who were often intractable militia men. Jackson's colourfully foul language was an effective means of getting through to them. Indeed, he once prevented a mutiny among his unhappy militia with his frightful, but attention-grabbing, tirades. His was also immensely tough and was given the nickname 'Old Hickory' after one of his men compared him to the durable wood.



ANDREW JACKSON AND 'INDIAN REMOVAL'

Andrew Jackson saw the removal of Native Americans over the Mississippi River as a way to protect the United States as it expanded westward

The harsh lesson that Jackson learned in his youth, as the bloodshed of the American Revolution unfolded around him, was that the enemies of the United States would use the Natives of North America against it. The British had encouraged raids against American settlers, resulting in much loss of life. British agents would also seek to provoke Native American attacks even after American independence had been granted.

For Jackson, the presence of Native Americans would always be a threat to the US. He became convinced that encouraging the Natives to migrate to the west of the Mississippi River would be the most beneficial solution. The frontier, which was still east of the river at that point, would be more secure if the Natives were moved further west over it. Also, tribes east of the Mississippi were under pressure from increasing numbers of settlers who wanted their land. The policy of 'national removal' – in which Natives would vacate their lands east of the Mississippi in exchange for lands west of it – gained currency. Jackson had been in favour of this policy since long before he became president, and even Thomas Jefferson had considered it.

One of the earliest instances of removal came in 1809, during Jefferson's presidency, when a portion of the Cherokee Nation, the Chickamauga, moved from their old homes in the American South for new ones in Arkansas. Removal would have the strong support of presidents thereafter. In 1816, other Cherokees themselves came forward with a proposal to move west. The United States gained an immense tract of valuable, fertile land from the Cherokees for a pittance payment of just \$26,000.

During his presidency, Jackson changed the policy of removal from the ad hoc affair it had been before, signing in 1830 the Indian Removal Act, which formalised the process under American law.



The Cherokees controlled extensive lands in Georgia and Tennessee, in 1827, before they were forced to relocate by the US government



General Jackson leads the defence at Line Jackson against attacking British troops



East and West Florida were Spanish possessions and provided safe havens for Natives hostile to the US

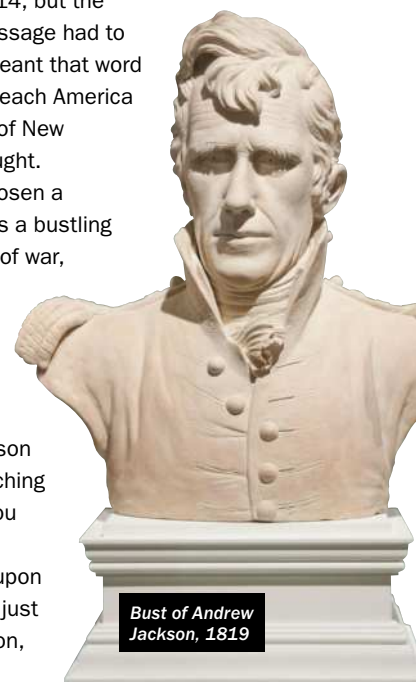
He had a volcanic temper, too, and often threatened to kill those who angered him. One altercation with a pair of American militia officers saw him badly wounded, with Jackson taking bullets in his left arm and shoulder. A massacre at Fort Mims in July 1813, and the prospect of not being appointed to command the punitive expedition against the 'Red Sticks' Creek Natives who had slaughtered the inhabitants, roused him from his sickbed, before he had fully healed, to take up the command of his militia once more.

Jackson led his troops against the Creeks in several battles, winning the nickname 'Sharp Knife' from his battered enemies. At Fort Talladega in November 1813, Jackson killed hundreds of Natives. He defeated them in a second battle in the early morning darkness in January 1814 on a field lit by brush fires he had set so that the Natives would be silhouetted

against the flames. At Horseshoe Bend, in March, he bombarded Natives who had taken refuge in a stockade. Jackson offered terms, but a cloud crossed the sky above their heads as he was doing so. The superstitious Creeks interpreted this as a favourable sign to keep fighting. They were instead crushed by Jackson's men, with hundreds falling.

It was in Louisiana later that year that Jackson would gain immortal fame for his defence of the port city of New Orleans. The War of 1812 had been, largely, going poorly for the overmatched Americans. They had entered the war in a bid to stop the impressment of their sailors by the Royal Navy, but that same navy had, once Napoleon had been defeated and sent to the island of Elba, crossed the Atlantic in force and shut down much the eastern coast of the United States. Peace commissioners were already meeting in Ghent in Belgium in mid-1814 to discuss ending the war. Indeed, a peace treaty would be signed on 24 December, 1814, but the distance that the message had to travel over the sea meant that word of the treaty did not reach America until after the Battle of New Orleans had been fought.

The British had chosen a valuable target. It was a bustling port and, after years of war, valuable goods had piled up, unshipped because of the British blockade. The British Army outmaneuvered Jackson by unexpectedly marching through swampy bayou country east of New Orleans. They came upon the Mississippi River just below the city. Jackson,



Bust of Andrew Jackson, 1819

"THE WAXHAW MASSACRE SPURRED JACKSON AND HIS OLDER BROTHER ROBERT TO JOIN THE LOCAL PATRIOT MILITIA"

however, formed a solid defensive barrier bristling with cannons eight miles south of New Orleans, called Line Jackson. He also imposed martial law on the freewheeling city.

The British force, composed of veterans of the war against Napoleon, faced a ragtag American army of a handful of regulars, half-trained militia, and a band of pirates under the notorious Jean Lafitte. On 23 December, Jackson led the Americans in a ferocious night attack that stymied the British advance. A major British assault on 1 January 1815 was also turned back. On 8 January 1815, Sir Edward Pakenham, the British commander, made one final throw of the dice and sent his

entire army into a frontal assault against the American defences.

Fatal miscommunication hampered the British attack and Jackson emerged triumphant by the end of the day. He was a national hero for his successful defence of the city, and his fame was undimmed even though peace had been made before the battle.

Jackson, who was now General of the Army of the South, saw his next big fight come against Native Americans in the First Seminole War. The Seminoles were a powerful tribe in Spanish Florida, and as Jackson had always feared, they had tried to gain aid from the British and the Spanish in their struggles with the United States. Jackson was also troubled by the marauding Red Sticks Creeks who had found a safe haven in Florida from which to attack the US. To protect the expanding nation, Jackson believed, Florida would have to be brought under US control.

In December 1817, President Madison ordered Jackson to take charge of a punitive campaign against hostile Creeks and Seminoles. To Jackson, this was an opportunity to go further. The troubles with the Seminoles could be solved once and for all if the Spanish were ousted from Florida. So, in March 1818, Jackson, acting largely on his own initiative, mounted an invasion of Florida with an army of 3,000 soldiers and the twin goals of putting down the Seminoles while also ejecting the Spanish. He quickly overwhelmed the Spanish and the Seminoles, capturing a Spanish fort at St Marks on 7 April.

On 15 April, Jackson won a small battle against the Seminoles at Bowlegs Towns in northern Florida. Two British agents were also captured during the campaign, and with them incriminating documents that proved to Jackson



A statue of Andrew Jackson, astride his horse

that Britain had been behind America's frontier problems. By May, the First Seminole War had come to an end, and before the month was out, he had captured Pensacola from the Spanish as well. Florida was, for all practical purposes, now in American hands. The presence of the British agents in Florida again confirming in Jackson's eyes that the Natives were always potential allies for America's enemies.

Jackson would resign from the United States Army in 1821 and then pursue a career in politics. He became a US senator for Tennessee in 1823. Most notably, the war hero was elected president in 1828 and was reelected to the office in 1832. As president, Jackson would become the standard-bearer of a democracy that was more open to the common man, not just the well-bred elites. He died in 1845.



Andrew Jackson became the seventh president of the United States in 1829



MASSACRE AT FORT MIMS

Hundreds of settlers and militia perished when Fort Mim was overrun by Red Sticks Natives

On 27 July 1813 at Burnt Corn Creek in southern Alabama, a force of American settlers and mixed-race Creek Natives ambushed a party of Red Sticks, an especially bloodthirsty faction of the Creeks. After the ambush, the attackers found safety inside a primitive stockade on the Tennessee River, Fort Mims, that had been put up around a house owned by Samuel Mims, a settler from Georgia. Inside Fort Mims were several hundred settlers who had fled there for protection from the rampages of the Red Sticks. Defending the fort was a force of 120 American militiamen.

The Red Sticks were out for vengeance and planned an attack on the fort. Unfortunately, the commander of the militia at Mims, Major Daniel Beasley, left much to be desired. He paid little attention to reports of Natives in the area and

allowed the fort's gates to become clogged by sand and clay, rendering them difficult to shut. On 30 August 1813, he let them remain open instead of ensuring that they were closed.

Some 700 Red Sticks were lurking just outside while Beasley was busy playing card games. They swarmed inside the open gates and surprised the people inside at lunchtime. Beasley was felled by a tomahawk and hundreds of militiamen and settlers, including women and children, were slain in what became known as the Fort Mims Massacre. Survivors numbered barely a dozen.

When news of the massacre spread, it was mourned that Jackson himself, who lay badly wounded in bed at the time, would not be able to lead the fight against the Red Sticks. When he heard this, a furious Jackson bellowed, "The devil in hell I'm not!" and took command again.



A depiction of the Fort Mims Massacre, which galvanised Jackson out of hospital and back into command



A scene depicting
the Battle of
Tippecanoe, 1811



TECUMSEH

A FORGOTTEN LEGEND

As Great Britain once again became embroiled in a struggle with its former colony, an unlikely ally would appear, eager to take the fight to the USA

YEARS ACTIVE: 1810-1813
CONFLICTS: WAR OF 1812
RANK: CHIEF

Folk heroes, especially underdogs, are immortalised in tales told by generations of admirers. Many of these stories that are passed down embellish the truth considerably, but the legend remains a powerful image and an inspiration to all.

In Native American culture, where oral history takes on a far more vital role than in our own, Shawnee chief Tecumseh is remembered as one of the truly great resistance leaders in the fight against the white American settlers and their Manifest Destiny.

In the US, Tecumseh's legacy is one of reverence for a formidable foe. He is also commemorated in Canadian folklore as a man that fought hard to defend Canada against US invasion in the War of 1812. However, this was not his main intention; his aim was to defend the native peoples residing across the border from harm by white settlers.

In Britain, he is barely remembered at all. As arguably the most famous Native American warrior in history, he ought to be given his due as a powerful ally, one who combined his own method of warfare with British instruction to create innovative and ingenious strategies.

Tecumseh, a member of the Shawnee tribe in Ohio, grew up around war. His father, Pucksinwah, had fought in the Seven Years' War (1756-1763) alongside the French, in order to prevent British settlers from gaining further territory in the region. Shortly after Tecumseh's birth in 1768, Pucksinwah was murdered at the Battle of Point Pleasant, during Lord Dunmore's War in 1774. Tecumseh took it upon himself to fight using whatever means necessary to stop his people falling prey to the onslaught of white settlers. He began by disrupting trade routes along the Ohio River, which briefly grounded passing boats to a halt.

Soon afterwards, Tecumseh set his sights much higher, and aimed to expel settlers from his region entirely. In previous decades, the Shawnees had been deliberately isolated from other tribes in the region, so Tecumseh decided to rebuild the trust and solidarity that had been lost in order to effectively fight against the Americans. He and his brother, Tenskwatawa (also known as 'the Shawnee Prophet'), sought to revive traditional Native religion as a unifying force, raising enthusiasm for battle. Tenskwatawa had already accumulated a considerable support base by prophesying

that an apocalypse would destroy the white settlers. What became known as Tecumseh's Confederation had members from tribes all across the region, including the large Iroquois and Wyandot groups. Most were concentrated around the Tippecanoe River, in modern-day Indiana. The main settlement here was named Prophetstown, a centre of Native American culture and administration, named after its founder, Tenskwatawa.

After his work at home was done, Tecumseh travelled south to try and recruit the 'Five Civilised Tribes', who had the potential to strengthen the pan-Indian movement enormously: the Cherokee, Choctaw, Chickasaw, Creek and Seminole people. These groups were held in relatively good regard by the US, because they had adopted Euro-American ways and were used as an example to other tribes. By gaining crucial allies in this group, Tecumseh knew he would be a formidable force, as they possessed greater influence and resources than any other Native group.

Tecumseh was a fantastic orator, and his speeches were very well attended. In a council with Choctaws and Chickasaws in 1811, he cried, "The annihilation of our race is at hand

unless we unite in one common cause against the common foe.” He warned against their appeasement tactics, stating, “You are among the few of our race who sit indolently at ease.” However, he found it difficult to gain much traction further south, as the Five Tribes had their own ideas about how best to win back (or at least, stay on) Native lands. Pushmataha, a regional Choctaw power-holder, had this to say in response: “Our people have no undue friction with the whites. Why? Because we have had no leaders stirring up strife to serve their selfish, personal ambitions”.

The confederacy was always intended to be a military alliance, even if it masqueraded as a cultural and religious revival movement. Tecumseh was a warrior at heart, but many of his contemporaries, such as Black Hoof (another Shawnee leader), preferred to go down the diplomatic route to try and win favour with the whites.

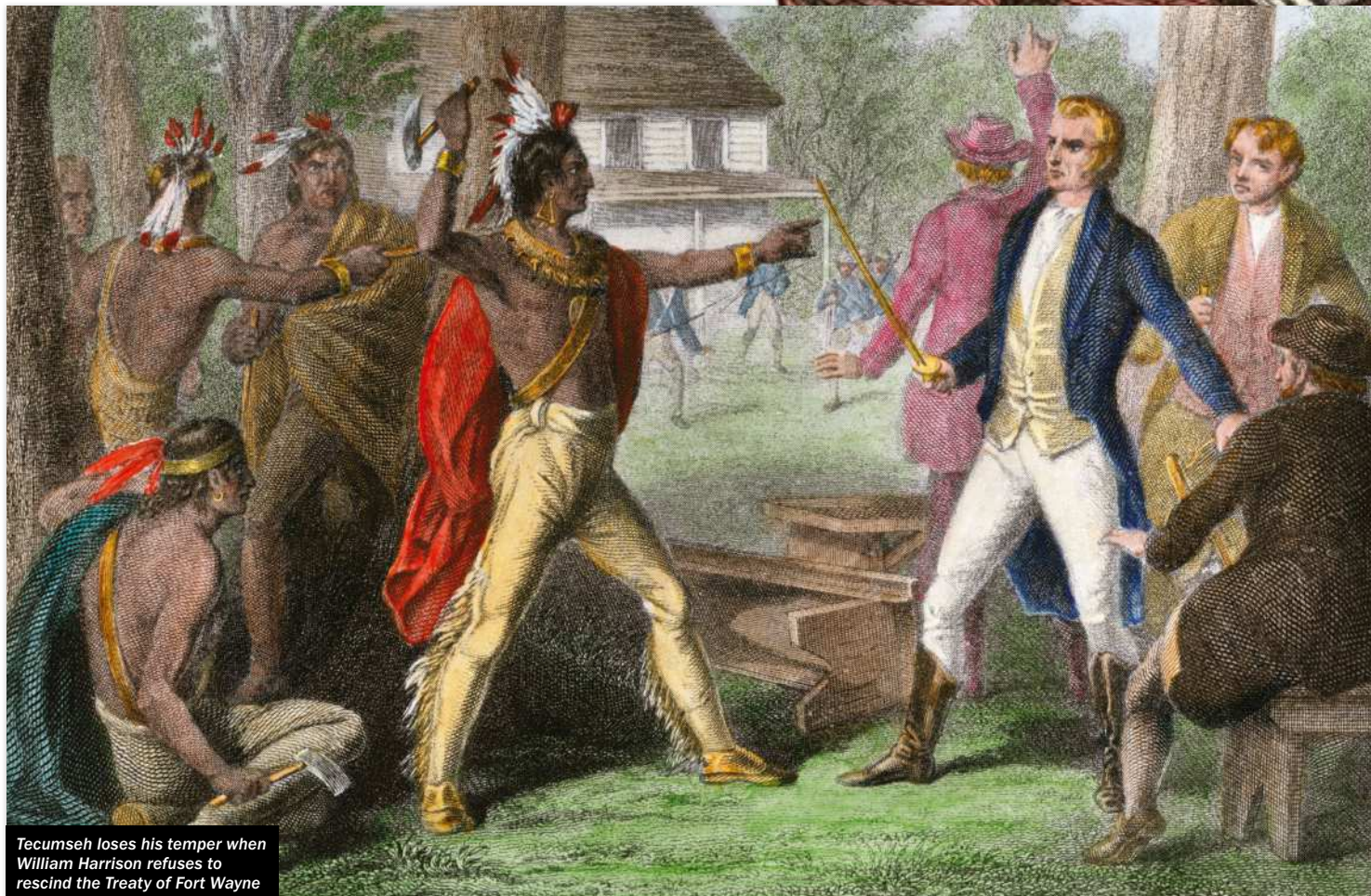
Tecumseh’s finest hour came with his namesake rebellion, which lasted from 1810 and continued during the War of 1812. Tensions had begun to rise between him and local governor William Henry Harrison, the future president of the US. Harrison had refused to nullify the Treaty of Fort Wayne, ceding millions of acres of Native land to the US government, which Tecumseh believed

was invalid. In protest, he led a band of 400 warriors to Harrison’s house. A particularly heated negotiation escalated when Tecumseh raised his tomahawk and Harrison drew his sword. Chief Winamac, a Potawatomi chief also in attendance, intervened and urged Tecumseh and his band to leave in peace.

As he was departing, Tecumseh threatened to look to the British for support. He talked of victory, making the tomahawk “fat with the blood of white men”. His developing confederacy was reassured of the success the war would bring, because, according to Tecumseh, the British King would send “brave warriors against them; he will send us rifles, and whatever else we want”. Strange as it is to believe, he talked favourably of the King and in a speech to the Osage tribe called him the ‘Great Father’, saying that he was angry with the Americans. This statement had some truth to it, as the King wanted to reassert British dominance over the American economy. He was willing to ally with Tecumseh to stop Americans encroaching on Canada, which at the time was still a British possession.



A stylised portrait of Tecumseh in uniform based on a mistaken belief he was a British general



Tecumseh loses his temper when William Harrison refuses to rescind the Treaty of Fort Wayne

“HEREIN LIES AN EXAMPLE OF THE LIMITATIONS OF BRITISH-NATIVE CO-OPERATION; NO MATTER WHAT TECUMSEH DID, IT WAS IMPOSSIBLE TO SHAKE OFF THE STEREOTYPICAL VIEW THAT TRIBESPEOPLE WERE FUNDAMENTALLY SAVAGES”

While Tecumseh was away making speeches and trying to encourage different tribes to join him, Tenskwatawa was left in charge in Prophetstown. The US army set up an encampment close by, and the battle of Tippecanoe began overnight. Tecumseh returned to find his brother in disgrace and his followers disillusioned. Enraged, he started to rebuild Prophetstown and his shattered Confederacy, preparing his people for the oncoming war.

After the defeat at Tippecanoe, Tecumseh drew closer to the British, as they were less interested in conquering territory and more concerned with maintaining a trade monopoly with the US. For Native Americans, this was the lesser of two evils, and as the war raged on, the British would assist Tecumseh by providing weapons, soldiers and strategic advice. They realised the importance of Native Americans as valuable assets in a battle for territory they had

known for millennia. During the American War of Independence (1775-1783), the Shawnee tribe had allied with the British and fought against the US many times. In the eyes of the British, they were a tribe that could be counted upon. The British were happy to supply Tecumseh's men with weapons as long as they continued to harass US supply lines.

Tecumseh aligned himself with Major-General Isaac Brock, a man with substantial vigour, and together they took the fight to US troops in Detroit, on 16 August 1812. While outside the fort, British troops placed themselves within easy view of the Americans, marched out of sight and repeated the procedure again. As visibility was poor, the Americans were fooled by this roleplay, believing there were more British troops than were actually present. From the other side of the fort, Tecumseh's warriors would do the exact same thing in a visible clearing of the nearby woods, making a

great deal of noise to maximise the illusion and amplify the sense of fear.

In spite of the fact there were only about 600 of Tecumseh's warriors, this repetitive procedure led the American garrison to conclude that there were as many as 3,000 of them. Brock also sent a threatening letter to the US leader, Hull, forewarning that he would not be able to keep the Native Americans under control once the battle had commenced.

Since there was a widespread fear among the troops of Native savagery and brutality, this threat was taken very seriously. Hull hoisted a white flag, fearing a massacre by Tecumseh, and around 2,500 Americans were captured by almost a thousand less British and Native American soldiers.

A year later, word got out that the Americans were planning on reclaiming Detroit. Brock had been killed and was replaced by Major-General Procter, a man with little practical experience of battle. On the American side, the aforementioned William Henry Harrison had taken over from Hull, and had constructed a defence on the road to Detroit at Fort Meigs.

Procter resolved to attack this position, in order to prevent the Americans from having the strength to recapture Detroit, as well as to disrupt supply lines. On 1 May 1813, the British



SHOWDOWN AT TIPPECANOE

In November 1811, the US decided to launch a pre-emptive strike against Tecumseh's Confederacy

The US marched on Tippecanoe in modern-day Indiana to attack Prophetstown and the centre of Tecumseh's rebellion. After numerous attempts to organise a ceasefire with William Henry Harrison, 600-700 anxious Confederacy tribesmen led by Tenskwatawa grew restless. They attacked the US encampment from the exposed north and south perimeters at approximately 4.30am. The east was protected by a steep slope, and the west by a small river. Harrison, leading the US troops, relied too heavily on the terrain and had used a standard, weakened, rectangle camp formation. The attack came as a total surprise, and although the

sleeping soldiers were initially startled, they managed to reinforce their position by working with local militia to repel the attacks from the north and south flanks. As the fight wore on, Tenskwatawa's warriors grew weary, low on both ammunition and morale. They retreated, and in retaliation the US army destroyed the nearby Prophetstown, delivering a harsh blow to the already fractured Confederation. Although the battle was technically a draw, William Henry Harrison used the slogan 'Tippecanoe and Tyler Too' during his presidential campaign in 1840 to remind voters of his military prowess.



Left: This sketch shows the location of personnel in the US encampment. Tenskwatawa's warriors attacked from woodland to the north and south
Above: A music sheet cover for the 'Tippecanoe Quick Step' arranged some 30 years after the battle had taken place

opened fire on the fort. Over 450 men from the Canadian militia joined regular units armed with two 24-pounder guns – captured from the last battle at Detroit – two gunboats and nine lighter pieces of artillery. However, Native American troops made up the majority of the invading force, with 1,250 men led by both Tecumseh and Wyandot chief, Roundhead.

After leading a significant number of the US Kentucky regiment into a nearby forest, they were able to inflict a great number of casualties on the American side. In the frenzy, a small number of Native warriors began killing prisoners before Tecumseh persuaded them to stop. As Procter was in command at the time, Tecumseh furiously questioned why he had not stopped them, to which he retorted that the Natives could not be controlled. Herein lies an example of the limitations of British-Native co-operation; no matter what Tecumseh did, it was impossible to shake off the stereotypical view that tribespeople were fundamentally savages.

At this point in the war Tecumseh was rapidly losing faith in the British and he and Procter disagreed over potential retreat. The latter wished to return to the safety of Canada, to resume fighting after the winter had weakened the US army, whereas the former was eager to regain land for his people. Tecumseh followed Procter's forces in late September 1813 until he reached Moraviantown, Canada – 50 miles east of Detroit.

Tecumseh announced here that they would go no further with the British forces, and delivered a moving speech which reveals his mounting distrust. "We are much astonished to see our father [Procter]... preparing to run away without letting his red children know

what his intentions are," said Tecumseh. "The Americans have not yet defeated us... and we therefore wish to remain here." To Procter, he said, "You have the arms and ammunition which our great father [the King] has sent for his red children. If you have an idea of going away, give them to us." The oncoming battle would be Tecumseh's last stand. After his death, the alliance of tribes he had toiled hard to create would completely disintegrate.

Artistic depictions of the Battle of the Thames show Tecumseh's warriors fighting with tomahawks, and the US army with rifles and muskets. However, it is more likely that Native warriors used a combination of traditional weapons and those provided by the British. They had supplied over 25,000 guns for approximately 10,000 auxiliary troops Tecumseh had recruited. It is said Tecumseh himself traded one of these weapons for a Kentucky rifle just days before the Battle of the Thames on 5 October 1813, at which he died defending Native troops against all odds. It is said he even had premonitions of his own death, and painted his face black that day in preparation to meet his end.

With Tecumseh gone, his Confederacy fell, and Native Americans lost one of their greatest leaders. Procter was eventually court-martialled for the poor leadership he had shown during the battle. However, his temporary suspension was little consolation for Tecumseh's men, who had lost more than just a commander. The breakdown of the British-Native alliance meant that neither party could put up any meaningful resistance to increased US settlement, so Natives were forced off their historic homelands. The repercussion of this is still

discernible today; tribes that once lived far and wide on rich soil have been reduced to small, barren, desert reservations in the West.

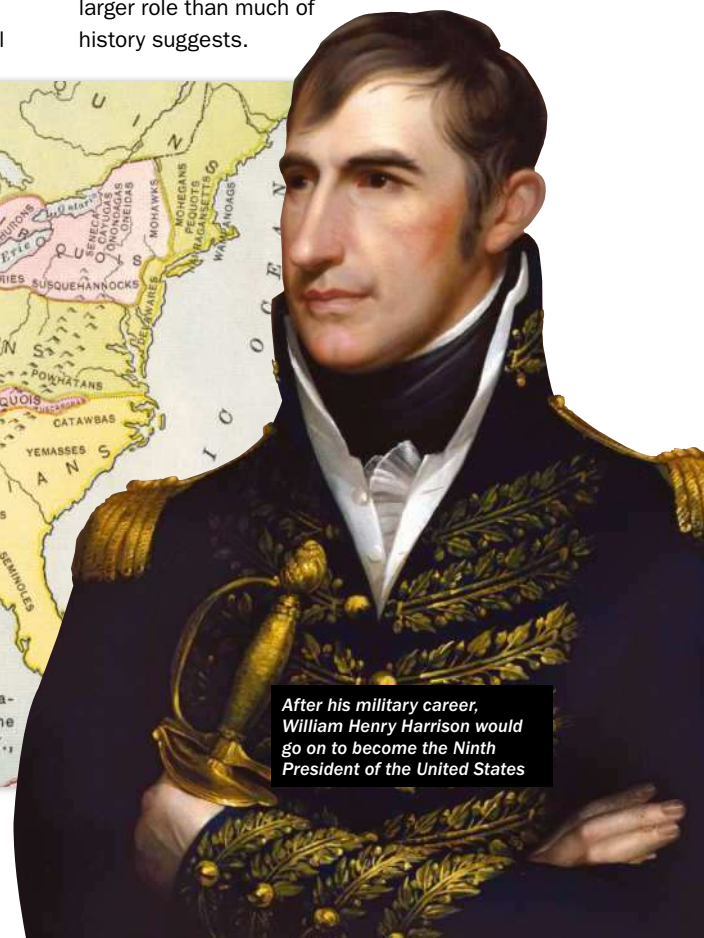
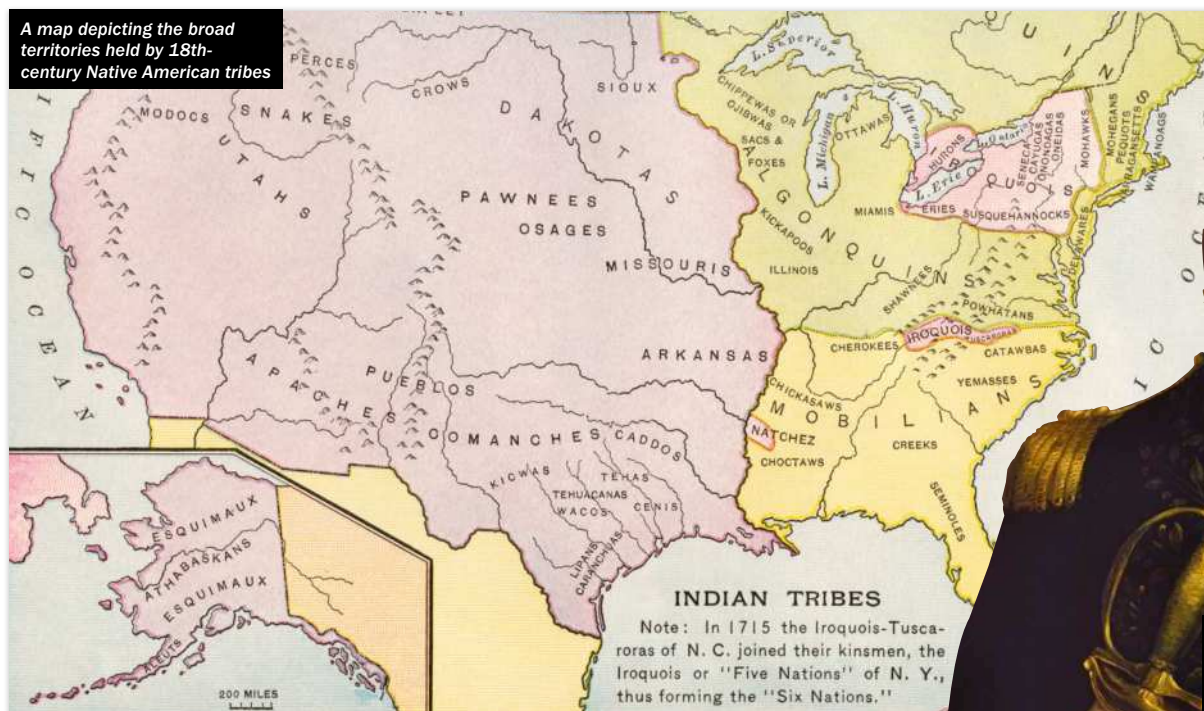
Some of the Confederacy tribes agreed to a truce only a week after Tecumseh's death, as the removal of British protection made them prey to American aggression. Tecumseh had been the man that inspired them to keep fighting, keep pushing for their independence, so today is remembered as a formidable opponent, even by white American citizens.

The man that was believed to have killed him, Richard Johnson, was later made Vice President of the US, due to the respect garnered from the incident. The Battle of the Thames also dramatically increased William Henry Harrison's popularity, and aided his presidential campaign.

Many towns in the American Midwest and southern Canada are named after Tecumseh. Even the renowned Union Civil War general, William Tecumseh Sherman, had to live up to the legend that gave him his middle name. A warship built by the Canadian Navy in 1815, to defend against the Americans, was named HMS Tecumseh, in memoriam of the recently deceased Canadian folk hero. Likewise, in the US, four ships have been named after him since his death.

The fact that Tecumseh, in spite of his ethnicity, has inspired such recognition is a testament to the success of Native American tribal warfare. It serves as an important reminder that British military history is not always composed of men from high society, and that indigenous peoples played a far larger role than much of history suggests.

A map depicting the broad territories held by 18th-century Native American tribes



After his military career, William Henry Harrison would go on to become the Ninth President of the United States

★★★ DOWNFALL AT THE THAMES

At Tecumseh's last stand, the British and the Native Americans were outnumbered almost 3 to 1

William Henry Harrison's men gave chase as Procter retreated into Canada. Tecumseh's men attempted to slow them, but a confrontation eventually came at Moraviantown, a settlement of Christian Native Americans. Procter set up a line of British troops, with only one cannon to protect them. Tecumseh's warriors flanked the Americans to the left, with the river to their right.

However, when the cannon failed to fire, Harrison's troops broke through. Procter fled and Tecumseh's warriors continued to fight to the bitter end. Despite the fact that the residents of Moraviantown had not taken part in the fighting, their village was brutally burned to the ground by the US army in a cruel act of reprisal.

1. Harrison's force

The 3,500 Americans led by Harrison were much better prepared for battle than the British or Native troops, having captured further weapons and supplies. The British soldiers also had serious doubts about Procter's leadership, so Harrison's main focus was to scupper British forces, giving the Americans the upper hand.

2. Tecumseh's force

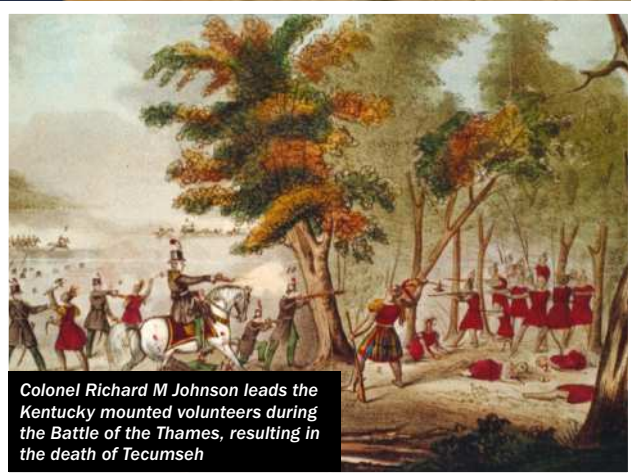
The Confederation army numbered about 500 at this point. Armed with a combination of guns and tomahawks, they were distracted by a smaller unit and could not reach the bulk of the enemy. However, both forces got bogged down in the swamp and had to dismount.

3. British army

Procter's plan was to isolate the US troops on the banks of the river and force a surrender. By having the Native Americans flank them to the north and 800 British troops directly ahead of them, theoretically there would be nowhere else for them to go.

4. Broken cannon

This six-pounder cannon was virtually the only piece of artillery available to Procter after his retreat. It was supposed to drive the US army off the road, but the dilapidated weapon failed to fire. At this point, the Americans broke through the British line.



Colonel Richard M Johnson leads the Kentucky mounted volunteers during the Battle of the Thames, resulting in the death of Tecumseh

5. British retreat

Having made a final attempt to fire one more round at the US troops, Procter and a number of his men fled after less than ten minutes of fighting. The remainder surrendered, leaving the Americans free to deal with Tecumseh and his warriors.

6. Tecumseh killed

After American reinforcements arrived, Tecumseh's warriors did not stand a chance, armed only with axes, knives, as well as a few guns. It is not known exactly who killed Tecumseh, as many claim to have done so. His Wyandot deputy, Roundhead, was also killed in the fighting.

"AFTER AMERICAN REINFORCEMENTS ARRIVED, TECUMSEH'S WARRIORS DID NOT STAND A CHANCE"



This 1889 portrait of Davy Crockett shows him with a raccoon skin and his famous rifle, named Old Betsy. Artists preferred to 'print the legend



DAVY CROCKETT

FOLK LEGEND OF THE FRONTIER

Was Davy Crockett really the king of the wild frontier?
Perhaps not, but he was certainly a legend in his own lifetime

YEARS ACTIVE: 1813-1836
CONFLICTS: TEXAS REVOLUTION
RANK: COLONEL

David 'Davy' Crockett led an eventful life by almost anyone's standards. At various times he was a frontiersman, politician and soldier, and he was certainly a colourful character. But his fame during his lifetime and long afterwards isn't just down to his real achievements. The tall stories he told about himself – and encouraged others to invent – made him a folk hero and legend in his own lifetime. Even today, when historical researchers have uncovered much of the truth about Davy, many of his admirers still prefer the made-up versions.

Davy was born in 1786, in a US state that no longer exists: the breakaway territory of Franklin, formerly considered part of North Carolina. Davy's father, John, was part of the strident movement trying to get Franklin officially recognised as the 14th State of America. The campaign was unsuccessful, however, and by the time Davy was 11, Franklin had been folded into the state of Tennessee. But the politicking that must have been the constant topic of conversation in the Crockett household clearly left an impression on the fifth of John and his wife Rebecca's nine children.

In the 20 years before he took up his own political office, Davy packed his life with experiences – some voluntary and others less so. Various financial calamities befell his family during his childhood, so he was forced to go out to work from the age of 12. His first job was as a cowboy on a 400-mile cattle drive to Virginia, and he undertook several similar journeys during the rest of his teens, although he also trained as a hatter for four years.

All of those jobs were in the service of paying off his father's mounting debts, but John released him from his obligations in 1802, making Davy his own man for the first time. Two marriages and a brood of children followed, and he gained some notoriety as a bear hunter providing meat for his local community. But in 1813 the lure of action was enough to make him leave his family and enlist with General Andrew Jackson's militia for the violent campaign against the Creek Indians. He only signed up as a scout, though, and he missed all of the major battles.

His military stint earned him more respect in his Tennessee hometown when he returned to his farm, leading to his election as a justice of the peace in 1817. He'd never read a single law book and had rarely attended school, but his homespun wisdom and common-sense decisions when dealing with criminals made him a popular local figure, and none of his rulings were ever appealed.

His meteoric rise continued. In 1818, annoyed by the other candidates, he successfully campaigned to get himself elected as lieutenant colonel of his local militia regiment. Despite only holding the post for a couple of years, he used the 'Colonel' title for the rest of his life. He also became a local commissioner, helping to make and shape decisions in the running of the town and configuring the county boundaries. In 1821 he decided to run for the Tennessee state legislature, the campaign trail that began to see him honing his skills at spinning yarns, garnering him more widespread fame.

“IN THE 20 YEARS BEFORE HE TOOK UP HIS OWN POLITICAL OFFICE, DAVY PACKED HIS LIFE WITH EXPERIENCES”



THE DEATH OF DAVY CROCKETT

Crockett's closing chapter

Depending on whom you ask, Davy Crockett's death at the Alamo was either a heroic blaze of glory or a shameful defeat. The popular version, maintained by many of Crockett's defenders, particularly in Texas, where he remains a folk hero, is essentially the one depicted in the famous 1950s Disney TV series.

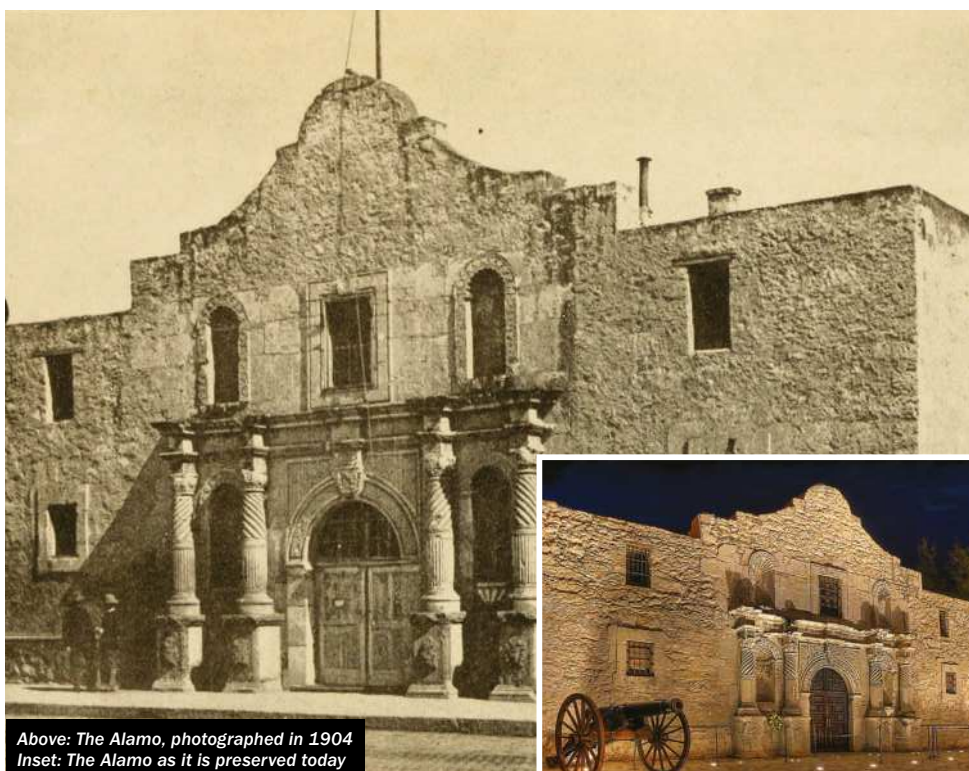
According to this story, Crockett, the last man standing at the battle, was finally overwhelmed by the Mexican hordes but went down fighting, swinging his rifle around him like a club because he was out of bullets. Lots of paintings and book covers depict him in this moment, encircled by heaps of Mexican bodies.

Historical research, however, suggests that Crockett surrendered and was taken prisoner along with other survivors of the siege. All were then executed when General Santa Anna refused clemency. Several eyewitness accounts attest to this – one even says Crockett tried to pretend to his captors that he was merely a tourist taking refuge in the Alamo when the fighting started.

However, those who prefer the former story point out that the only surviving eyewitnesses were Mexicans who wanted to smear Crockett's sterling reputation. Some historians have even faced abuse and death threats for daring to suggest the surrender story is true. Some truly die-hard Crockett fans even claim he wasn't killed at all.



The mission was bombarded for 13 days



Above: The Alamo, photographed in 1904
Inset: The Alamo as it is preserved today

At local hustings he won over crowds with his garrulous nature and, reportedly, bribes of free drinks; there are several reports of him delivering a speech and then inviting an entire audience to a nearby bar to stop them staying to hear the next candidate. The legends continued to grow around him.

One popular story has him placing a bet with a barman that there'll be drinks all round if he can shoot a raccoon, which he duly achieves. He then keeps winning the same bet simply by stealing the dead raccoon back and giving it to the dim-witted barkeep again. Another time, he apparently stole his opponent's speech and delivered it first, leaving the other man with nothing to say. He claimed his smile was so dazzling that it could stun a raccoon so he didn't need to shoot it and that his prowess as a raccoon killer stemmed from a vow he made never to be fooled again after a wily raccoon outwitted him.

This good-old-boy persona was a hit with the voters, carrying him to the state legislature in

1823 and eventually, in 1827, to Congress. The uneducated, rough-and-ready frontiersman cut an odd figure in stuffy Washington.

In 1831, a satirical play called *The Lion Of The West* opened in New York to huge success. Everyone recognised its ridiculous hero, Nimrod Wildfire, as a parody of Crockett, but far from being offended, Crockett embraced the fun of the character and the popularity that came with it. Fact and fiction began to merge in the public consciousness. It was Nimrod Wildfire that wore the raccoon skin hat; Crockett probably never wore one in his life. And yet it's that hat in which Crockett immediately began to be depicted in popular culture. That image survives to this day.

Crockett collaborated with the author Thomas Chilton in 1834 on an exaggerated autobiography, catchily titled *A Narrative Of The Life Of David Crockett Of The State Of Tennessee*. Apocryphal stories also started appearing in almanacs and dime novels about his adventures and his hunting and military

TIMELINE

- ★

● **Davy Crockett is born**
Not on a mountaintop (as the song goes) but in Greene County, Tennessee, not far east of Knoxville. His parents were pioneer farmers and tavern owners, but neither business was successful.
1786
- ★

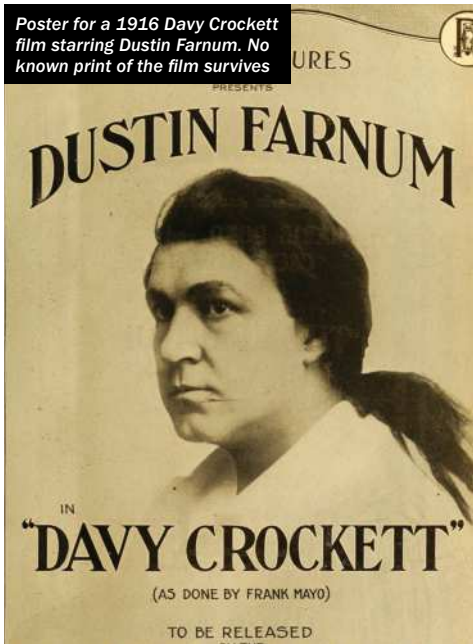
● **The cowboy life**
After some very cursory schooling, young Davy is sent out to work. His main jobs are as a cowboy, part of teams undertaking long cattle drives across the country.
1798
- ★

● **Davy's first marriage**
Crockett marries Polly Finley despite the objections of her mother to the uncultured lout. They have three children: John Wesley Crockett, William Finley Crockett and Margaret Finley Crockett.
1806
- ★

● **The great hunter**
Crockett becomes a respected member of his community as an accomplished frontiersman and talented hunter. He claims to have killed 100 bears in a single season.
1812
- ★

● **Davy's second marriage**
Crockett's second wife is the widow Elizabeth Patton. She already has two children (Margaret-Ann and George) and has three more with Crockett: Robert, Rebecca and Matilda.
1815
- ★

● **Justice of the peace**
Crockett begins to develop a taste for politics at a local level after moving to Shoal Creek, Tennessee. He becomes the town's first lawman and excels at it.
1817



pro prowess, and he undertook speaking tours. But this wasn't simple self-aggrandisement to play up his achievements.

The difference between Crockett's stories and someone like Buffalo Bill's is that Crockett's tall tales were tongue-in-cheek and couldn't possibly be believed. He sailed an alligator up the Niagara Falls, waded the Mississippi and jumped the Ohio; he was half horse; he rode a streak of lightning and broke the tail off Halley's comet. He even lit his pipe on the Sun.

Despite (or perhaps because of) his widespread celebrity, he was far from popular in Congress. Predictably something of a maverick, his fierce opposition to the Indian Removal Act and his championing of ordinary people's rights against wealthy business interests did not sit well with his colleagues and rivals. He made a lot of political enemies and failed to get a single law passed. Washington cared very little about treating Natives fairly or legislating for the poor. Andrew Jackson, by then the seventh US president, became increasingly frustrated with this unruly congressman, and Crockett in turn became disappointed and disillusioned with the man he had once followed into the Creek War.

Crockett was finally defeated at the polls at the end of his second term in 1835. Restless, broke and with his political career over, he started to look for new opportunities and identified them out west, where miles of Texan land was ripe for the taking and tensions with Mexico were simmering. By the time he got to Texas war with Mexico was looking increasingly likely, and Crockett was optimistic about the political role he might play in it. He swore an oath of allegiance to the provisional Government of Texas "or any future Republican government that may hereafter be dared" and embarked once again on a campaign trail (this time with an armed entourage), giving the rousing speeches he was now so renowned for.

Finally coming to a halt in San Antonio with a group of mounted volunteers, he was put in charge of the garrison, still expecting political rather than physical conflict. On February 23, 1836, however, the garrison was taken by surprise when it was ambushed by the Mexican Army led by General Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna. The famous siege of San Antonio's Alamo mission ensued: 13 days of artillery bombardment ending in the Mexicans storming the complex. After 90 minutes of battle all of the Alamo's defenders, including Crockett, were dead.

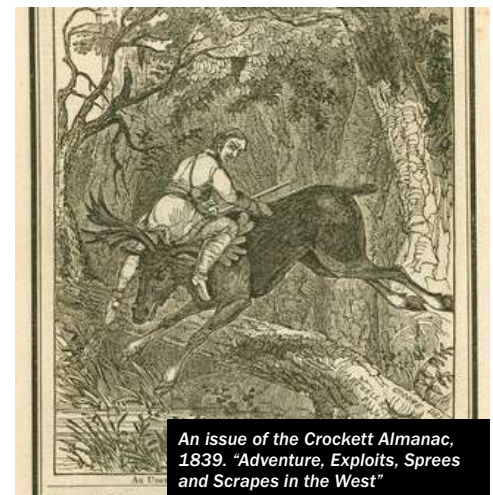
Despite his violent end, Crockett lived on in popular culture. A play entitled *Davy Crockett, or Be Sure You're Right, Then Go Ahead* (one of his famous homilies) was staged in New York in 1872 and remained popular until the death of its principal actor, Frank Mayo, in 1896. In the 1950s, a successful Disney TV series sparked Crockett-mania, selling millions of records of its theme song and creating a huge demand for Crockett-themed children's toys and raccoon skin hats (the hats reached sales of 5,000 a day, raising the wholesale price of raccoon tails by 2,000 per cent). John Wayne played Crockett in the big-budget spectacular *The Alamo* in 1960, and Billy Bob Thornton took the role in the 2004 remake. 181 years after his violent demise, we remember the fictional Crockett more than the real one. He'd probably be delighted by that.



A sailing card for the clipper ship *David Crockett*, depicting Davy sailing on two alligators (1855)

★ ★ ★ DAVY CROCKETT: FIVE FACTS

- 1** He married his second wife (the widow Elizabeth Patton) the same year his first (Polly Finley) died.
- 2** He caught malaria during the Creek War from wading around in mosquito-infested swamps hunting renegade Natives.
- 3** He tried to abolish the US Military Academy at West Point, New York, believing it a misuse of public money.
- 4** He witnessed an assassination attempt on President Andrew Jackson and helped tackle and disarm his would-be assailant.
- 5** Despite his folk hero status there, he only spent a total of three months out in Texas.



An issue of the *Crockett Almanac*, 1839. "Adventure, Exploits, Sprees and Scrapes in the West"

- ★ **Lieutenant colonel of militia**
Initially believing military ranks to be elitist, Crockett is persuaded to run for a top position in his local militia. He holds the commission for two years.
1818
- ★ **Elected to state legislature**
Crockett becomes a commissioner in Lawrenceburg, Virginia, and is then asked to run for Tennessee legislature, meaning he'll be responsible for decisions at state level. He wins the vote.
1821
- ★ **Lion of the West**
Crockett's larger-than-life personality is parodied in a popular play in New York. Crockett enjoys the attention and endorses the play. Other fictional representations of him follow.
1831
- ★ **Crockett's own story**
Crockett seeks to rein in the mythology and set the record straight with his own autobiography. It's less outlandish than some Crockett yarns but still quite liberal with the truth.
1834
- ★ **Out of office**
Having failed to pass a single piece of legislation in Congress, Crockett loses the election at the end of his second term. He is defeated by William Fitzgerald.
1835



A 53-year military career was remarkable enough, but Scott also secured some of the finest victories in American military history



WINFIELD SCOTT

OLD FUSS AND FEATHERS

Arrogant, overbearing, unpopular and pedantic, Winfield Scott was nevertheless one of the greatest generals in his country's history

YEARS ACTIVE: 1808-1861
CONFLICTS: WAR OF 1812, BLACK HAWK WAR, MEXICAN-AMERICAN WAR, CIVIL WAR
RANK: LIEUTENANT GENERAL

Although he would become one of America's most distinguished generals, Winfield Scott's first inclination was to be a lawyer. Having attended the College of William and Mary he practised law for a brief period before turning his attention to a military career. Many would no doubt believe he never quite left his legal roots behind, and the number of long-running disputes he became engaged in, not to mention his often-tortuous attempts to twist facts in his favour, would support such a view.

Nevertheless, although not a popular man (in fact he inspired animosity in many of his contemporaries), Scott performed with distinction in several major wars, became the commanding general of the Army for a period of 20 years and served his country for more than five decades. Time may have caught up with him in the end, as warfare changed dramatically during his career, but for a notable period he was one of the most forward-thinking and modern-minded officers in the US Army.

In 1808, as tensions with Great Britain rose and war seemed imminent, Congress voted to expand the army, tripling it in size. Although this

only brought its strength up to a feeble 10,000, it opened up new positions for men of ambition and Scott accepted a commission as a captain of artillery. He celebrated by buying himself a fancy uniform and allegedly enjoyed staring at his reflection in a mirror while striking dramatic poses for several hours.

His first experience of army life, in a camp near New Orleans, was sobering. Terrible conditions, bad discipline, little or no organisation and weak leadership prompted Scott to rethink his career choice, and he seriously considered resigning. Although he eventually decided to stay in the army, he was already under a cloud for insulting his commanding officer and there were also suspicions he had purloined some of his men's pay (he insisted he had only taken money owed to him by the men, but he had not followed the proper procedure in recouping it).

A year-long suspension gave the young officer time to brush up on his military history, and he spent it well. Immersing himself in textbooks and treatises, he developed a firm grasp of modern, professional soldiering. This also added generously to his already overbearing self-confidence.

By the end of 1811 war seemed even closer and the army was expanded once more, now to 30,000. Now a lieutenant colonel in the 2nd Artillery Regiment, Scott was ready to see action for the first time. Once more he received a poor introduction to the realities of serving with an essentially amateur army – during the 1812 invasion of Canada, he took part in a disastrous attack on Queenston.

A poorly organised amphibious landing saw the Americans throw away a considerable numerical advantage over the British troops on the other side of the river. The American militia proved particularly unreliable, with many claiming at the critical moment that the terms of their enlistment did not include invading a foreign country. Scott may well have been able to mount a convincing legal case to compel them to move, but he was trapped on the opposite bank as British reinforcements closed in. He was one of 900 prisoners captured following a battle that also cost the Americans 200 casualties.

Given time to stew over this failure during his brief period as a prisoner-of-war, Scott reflected that the Americans had lost the initiative and had become embroiled in a defensive battle.



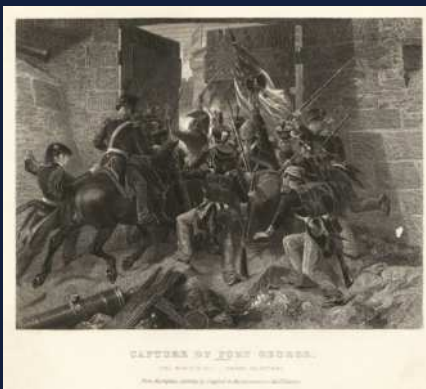
THE FALL OF FORT GEORGE

Scott's first major success exhibited many of his finest characteristics and marked the dawn of a new era for the US Army

Following his capture during the ill-fated attack on Queenston in 1812, the young Winfield Scott was held prisoner at Fort George. Paroled after five weeks, he jumped at the chance to return to Fort George at the head of an assaulting force. Having comprehensively reorganised the army under Dearborn, he drew up plans to take the British fort.

Several of the elements in his plan became more or less Scott trademarks. He included a preparatory artillery barrage to soften up the defences (he repeated this on numerous occasions, especially during his campaign to take Mexico City), he made use of an amphibious landing and he descended on the fort from the rear to increase the element of surprise. Most of all, however, it was his meticulous planning that stood out in an army that had previously been notable for its amateurish efforts.

Leading his men personally, Scott injected energy and unusual aggressiveness into the assault, which saw the British put up stiff resistance initially, but eventually abandon the fort before the Americans could arrive. Scott then pursued the fleeing British doggedly, despite orders to halt, and came close to capturing them. The British lost 350 men (American losses were just 150) in what has been described as the best-planned battle of the entire war.



The capture of Fort George was a triumph of planning, organisation and improved discipline

He resolved to always be on the offensive, if possible, in future. He also recognised the need for greater organisation in the army, and he was just the man to tackle the job.

Following his release from captivity, Scott joined the staff of the elderly but amiable General Henry Dearborn as he prepared for a new invasion of Canada. Recognising the qualities of the young Scott, and not having the enthusiasm required for the task himself,



Scott's men, in their smart grey uniforms, advance into action at the Battle of Chippewa



Scott's brigade stood up bravely to its ordeal, but his leadership was suspect at Lundy's Lane

Dearborn effectively turned over the running of his army to the energetic youngster. Scott transformed the army, introducing organisation and discipline and also putting together meticulous plans for an attack on the British-held Fort George, at Newark. Demanding and pedantic, he was already beginning to earn his nickname, 'Old Fuss and Feathers', a derogatory reference to his fondness for fine detail and finer uniforms.

His methods may have drawn comment, but they also brought success, as a well-executed amphibious landing was followed by the capture of Fort George. Scott was the sort of man needed to transform the poorly performing army and he was among a number of ambitious new faces (including Jacob Brown and Andrew Jackson) promoted to brigadier general in

1814. Two years earlier, the average age of a US Army general had been 60 years. It was now just 36 and Scott, at just 27 years old, was the youngest general in the Army.

Showing once more his talent for organisation, he put in place a plan of training for the troops that went a long way toward turning the Army into a modern, professional entity. The improvement he helped to instil became evident at two of the most important engagements of his career. At the Battle of Chippewa, on 5 July 1814, the Americans fought and got the better of British regulars, although they were outnumbered 1,700 to 1,300. Just 20 days later, Scott experienced the flipside of the military coin at the Battle of Lundy's Lane. Inexplicably deciding to try what he admitted was 'an experiment' in attacking in column, he subjected his brigade to fearful losses against determined British opponents. In six hours of unusually bloody fighting, both the British and Americans lost more than 800

"THE IMPROVEMENT HE HELPED TO INSTIL BECAME EVIDENT AT TWO OF THE MOST IMPORTANT ENGAGEMENTS OF HIS CAREER"



Henry Dearborn had the sense to recognise and make use of the organisational abilities of the young Scott

men. Scott's brigade accounted for a shocking 517 of those casualties and he never submitted a formal battle report, although the discipline of his men in the face of such punishment was remarkable. He also suffered a serious wound himself, taking a musket ball to his left shoulder, which for a time threatened his life and took months to heal.

His wound ruled him out of further action for the remainder of the War of 1812, but he was becoming established in the mind of the public as a hero, no doubt helped by his brush with death at Lundy's Lane. Promoted to brevet major general, mutterings continued about his arrogance and his penchant for belittling other officers' contributions in order to highlight his

own. His rapid ascent through the ranks did nothing to lessen his opinion of himself and on his return to duty after a tour of Europe to take in the latest developments in military thinking, he made this abundantly clear.

In May 1816 the defences of the country had been reorganised, with eight military 'districts' being set up, five in the north and three in the south. Scott was given command of Military District No 3, but immediately pressed hard to be granted control over the fourth district as well. Always hungry for more power and prestige, he had made his share of enemies and was turned down.

Brushing off the setback, he returned to what he knew best and proposed that he should write a new book of regulations for the army. In 1818 he was granted leave to do so and estimated that it would take him a year. In fact, it took him three, and he was heartily sick of the job by the time he finally completed it. His arrogance had led him to insist that he should be left alone to write the manual, fearing the influence of 'lesser minds' in his great work, but the end result was a success. The General Regulations for the Army set forth in the most minute detail how the army should be run and how each officer and soldier should play his part.

Scott then became embroiled in a long-running argument over who should replace Jacob Brown as commanding general of the army upon his eventual departure from the scene (both Scott and Edmund Gaines held identical ranks beneath Brown and the issue



The question of who should replace Jacob Brown at the head of the army was one of the major controversies of Scott's career



THE MARCH TO MEXICO CITY

Scott defied predictions of catastrophe when he led his men through hostile territory in Mexico

The Duke of Wellington had no doubts when he heard that Scott had abandoned his supply line and was marching through hostile territory in Mexico, living off the land as he pushed on towards Mexico City. Scott and his army, the Duke believed, were doomed.

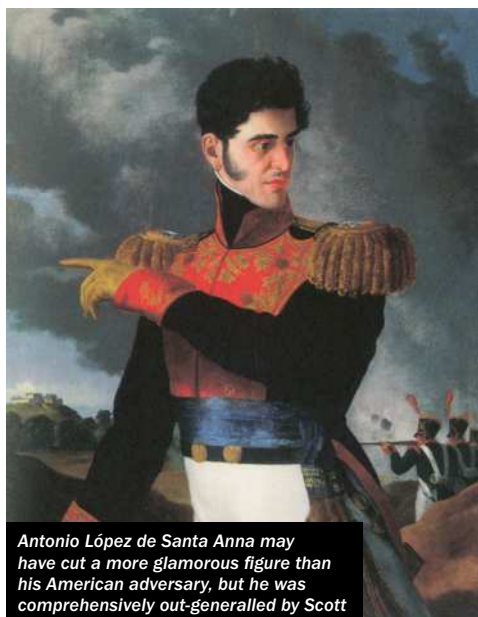
There was ample reason for such pessimism. Wellington had witnessed how the 'Spanish ulcer' had sapped French strength and morale as small bands of guerrillas made life miserable and sometimes very short for the occupying French troops during the Napoleonic Wars.

Scott, however, managed to avoid such a fate and a big part of the reason was the restraint shown by his men. They were not saints, but in General Order No 20 Scott had detailed the behaviour he expected from them in relation to the civilian population. He even went so far as to instruct his men to protect the locals from the predations of bandits. As a result, there was no general uprising and he was able to reach Mexico City to complete the greatest campaign of his career.

Wellington quickly changed his tune on hearing of the success. Scott was now, in the opinion of the Iron Duke himself, the 'greatest living soldier'. Scott no doubt shared this sentiment.



A triumphal entry into Mexico City on 14 September 1847 was the reward for Scott's daring march



Antonio López de Santa Anna may have cut a more glamorous figure than his American adversary, but he was comprehensively out-generalled by Scott

pivoted on the tricky subject of seniority, which Scott's lawyer mentality delighted in exploring). In the event, when Brown did eventually step down the government was unable to choose between the feuding successors and appointed Alexander Macomb instead, a move that pleased nobody.

Scott bided his time and displayed an unexpected knack for diplomacy during an extended period of peace, although he also served in the Black Hawk War of 1832. He eventually won the army's top job in 1841, in time to enjoy his finest hour as a commander during the Mexican-American War.

Although in overall command of the army, he led an invasion of Mexico in 1847. The invasion was notable for the exceptionally well-organised amphibious landings near Veracruz on 9 March, in which 8,600 men were ferried to shore in three waves, with no losses. Scott's landing ground had been well chosen, being 3.2 kilometres (two miles) away from the formidable

The successful amphibious landing at Veracruz was testament to Scott's exemplary preparations



city defences. By then marching his men around behind the city, he effectively nullified more than half of the 200 guns in Veracruz, which were mostly sited to contest an assault from the sea.

Scott now showed uncharacteristic restraint, carefully husbanding his force and striving to minimise casualties, even though he knew his patience would not play well at home. His careful progress was justified when Veracruz fell on 28 March. A lengthy artillery bombardment – which saw the Americans lob over 6,500 shells and roundshot at the castle – decided the issue, rather than an expensive infantry assault. Scott had clearly absorbed his lessons

on European warfare, where manoeuvre and outflanking were highly valued skills.

In his approach on Mexico City, Scott executed another flanking move to winkle the Mexican commander, Antonio López de Santa Anna – infamous for his slaughter of the garrison at the Alamo in 1836 – out of a strong defensive position.

Scott then pressed on toward Mexico City, living off the land and defying many naysayers who predicted catastrophe for his army as it advanced through hostile territory. Victories at Contreras and Churubusco brought the Americans within a few miles of their goal, but peace negotiations looked as if they might

“SCOTT BIDED HIS TIME AND DISPLAYED AN UNEXPECTED KNACK FOR DIPLOMACY DURING AN EXTENDED PERIOD OF PEACE”



THE ANACONDA PLAN

With the opening of the Civil War, Scott found himself out of step with the rest of the American military establishment

Winfield Scott was commanding general of the Union Army at the outbreak of the American Civil War, and as such his opinion on how the war should be waged carried weight. Sadly for Scott, however, his carefully thought-out strategy did not chime with the strident mood of the times, and the thoughts of a 74-year-old general were easily dismissed by firebrands who were half his age and hungry for glory in what they considered to be 'their war'.

With the nation tripping over itself to get to the battlefield, Scott's plan to strangle the southern states into submission by means of an airtight blockade of its ports seemed disgracefully passive. The second element of the plan, a major offensive down the Mississippi River to cut the Confederacy in

two, is usually overlooked as focus remains on the crushing of resistance by blockade.

There were genuine weaknesses in the plan as well. The US Navy was nowhere near capable of mounting such a blockade and would take many months to be brought up to the necessary strength. On the other hand, both of its elements were implemented to some extent as the war progressed, although the blockade was never airtight.

The hostile reception his plan received helped to convince Scott that his time in the spotlight was over and he handed over the running of the war to the younger firebrands who dreamed of a quick victory and glory for all. It took them over four years to finish the war.



The vision of a snake wrapping its coils around the southern states was actually conjured up by opponents of the plan

settle the conflict. When they broke down – Santa Anna had merely used them as a cover for the preparation of his defences around Mexico City – Scott resumed his offensive.

At the fortifications at Molino del Rey the Americans took heavy casualties and controversy swirled over the action. William J Worth, commanding the 1st Division, asked permission to modify Scott's assault plan, but was turned down. The infantry was then ordered to advance before an artillery assault had softened the defences sufficiently and almost 800 Americans were killed or wounded out of an attacking force of 3,447. A few days later, at Chapultepec, Scott again pitched his men at a strong defensive position, but this time the preparatory artillery barrage lasted for a full day. On 13 September the castle was taken by storm and, following their success, the American troops could not be restrained from spilling into Mexico City itself, against Scott's orders. Gruelling street fighting was expected the next morning as Santa Anna still had thousands of troops defending the city, but when dawn came on 14 September it became apparent that the Mexican army had withdrawn. Mexico City had been taken and Scott had orchestrated a stunningly successful campaign.



A place on a two-cent stamp, sharing the 'honour' with another general, would not have gone down well with Scott



The American army advances on Chapultepec during the triumphant Mexico City campaign

Despite his remarkable success, Scott's career now bogged down in political wrangling. As a Whig, he was not in the good books of Democrat President James K Polk, and matters worsened when acrimony over the Mexico campaign erupted. An unseemly scrabble for credit saw Scott drawn into arguments with several of his officers, some of whom resorted to sending anonymous letters to the press to push their claims.

Polk took the opportunity to recall Scott, whose reputation subsequently suffered. Forced to defend his good name, and having precious few friends to stand by his side, he found himself mired in controversy. A potential candidacy for the White House was subsequently ruled out in 1848 and although he recovered enough to be the Whig candidate in 1852, he did poorly in the election.

The old soldier did not have much fight left in him but was breveted lieutenant general in 1852. Despite his political problems, and despite his increasing girth rendering him an object of fun, he remained popular with the public. He also once more showed an unexpected adeptness at diplomatic skill when he negotiated a peaceful resolution to the 'Pig War' of 1859, before it could escalate beyond the shooting of a pig.

Despite his southern heritage, Scott remained loyal to the Union when the Civil War erupted in 1861 and retained command of the army during the opening months of the struggle. He was 74 years old, in poor health and unable to sit on a horse due to his substantial size. Aware of his limitations, he offered the job of leading the Union Army to Robert E Lee, who had served with him in



An easy target for satirists, Scott was ridiculed by some when he ran for President in 1852

Mexico. Lee, of course, had other ideas and instead became one of the Confederates' greatest generals.


Scott's plan to wage the war, the so-called 'Anaconda Plan', was unpopular at the time but has since been reassessed and recognised as more imaginative than he was given credit for. With one of the main criticisms of it being that it would take too long to take effect, the length of the Civil War, and the dreadful list of casualties associated with it, suggest the Anaconda Plan may not have been such a bad idea after all.

By now, 'Old Fuss and Feathers' was being unkindly referred to as 'Old Fat and Feeble'. The war that was just beginning would eclipse his own achievements, leaving names such as Ulysses S Grant, George Armstrong Custer and William Tecumseh Sherman to join George Washington and Nathanael Greene in the annals of American military history. Scott's career had been astonishingly long, but it had fallen neatly between the two defining conflicts of American history up to that point, and as such, it has been largely overlooked by historians ever since.

Winfield Scott died on 29 May 1866 and was buried in the cemetery of the military academy at West Point, where he still enjoys a small amount of fame. The cadets of the academy wear grey uniforms and the legend is that this is in remembrance of the uniforms worn by Scott's men when they triumphed over the British at the Battle of Chippewa. Whether or not this is true, it would seem cruel to deny such an unappreciated general this small token of recognition.

LEE vs

America's greatest generals
clash in the fierce fight for
their country's soul

A detailed portrait of General Robert E. Lee, showing him from the chest up. He has a full white beard and mustache, and is wearing a dark blue military uniform with gold buttons and epaulettes. The background of the portrait is a stylized American flag with stars and stripes.

On 12 April 1861, troops from the seceding state of South Carolina opened fire on Federal government-held Fort Sumter, sparking the American Civil War. Soon, several other Southern states joined South Carolina in secession, seeking to preserve the institution of slavery by withdrawing from the Union and forming the Confederate States of America. Abraham Lincoln, 16th president of the United States of America, was resolved to bring the wayward states back, even by force. In the enormous struggle that ensued, the largest and deadliest ever to be waged on American soil, Union and Confederate armies would be led by two extraordinary soldiers, Ulysses S Grant and Robert E Lee, who in their origins and personalities could not have been more different from each other, except for their ferocious dedication to victory.

Born in January 1807 in Virginia, Robert E Lee was the son of Henry 'Light Horse Harry', a cavalry commander from the colony of Virginia who had achieved renown in the American War of Independence. Military service was part of the heritage of the Lee family, and the young man was admitted to United States Military Academy at West Point as part of the class of 1829. Lee seemed destined for great things, and played a role in one of the more notable episodes of the immediate pre-civil war era.

In October 1859, John Brown, a fanatical abolitionist, and 21 of his followers had seized the Federal arsenal at Harpers Ferry, Virginia. His plan was to give the firearms within to slaves and

**"IT IS WELL THAT WAR IS SO
TERRIBLE, OTHERWISE WE
SHOULD GROW TOO FOND OF IT"**

Lee to General Longstreet at the Battle
of Fredericksburg, 11 December 1862

GRANT

foment an insurrection. This plot failed when a group of US Marines, under the command of US Army Lieutenant Colonel Lee, appeared on the scene and quashed the raiders, killing ten and capturing most of the rest, including Brown.

By contrast, Lee's fellow West Point graduate Ulysses S Grant possessed an unexceptional everyman quality. Born in April 1822 to a tanner in Ohio, his lowly origins and reportedly shabby dress belied a careful, analytical mind. Very few would have predicted that the unassuming Grant, who had gone so far as to resign from the army in 1854, and then fail in his civilian business ventures, would one day become the paramount commander of the United States Army.

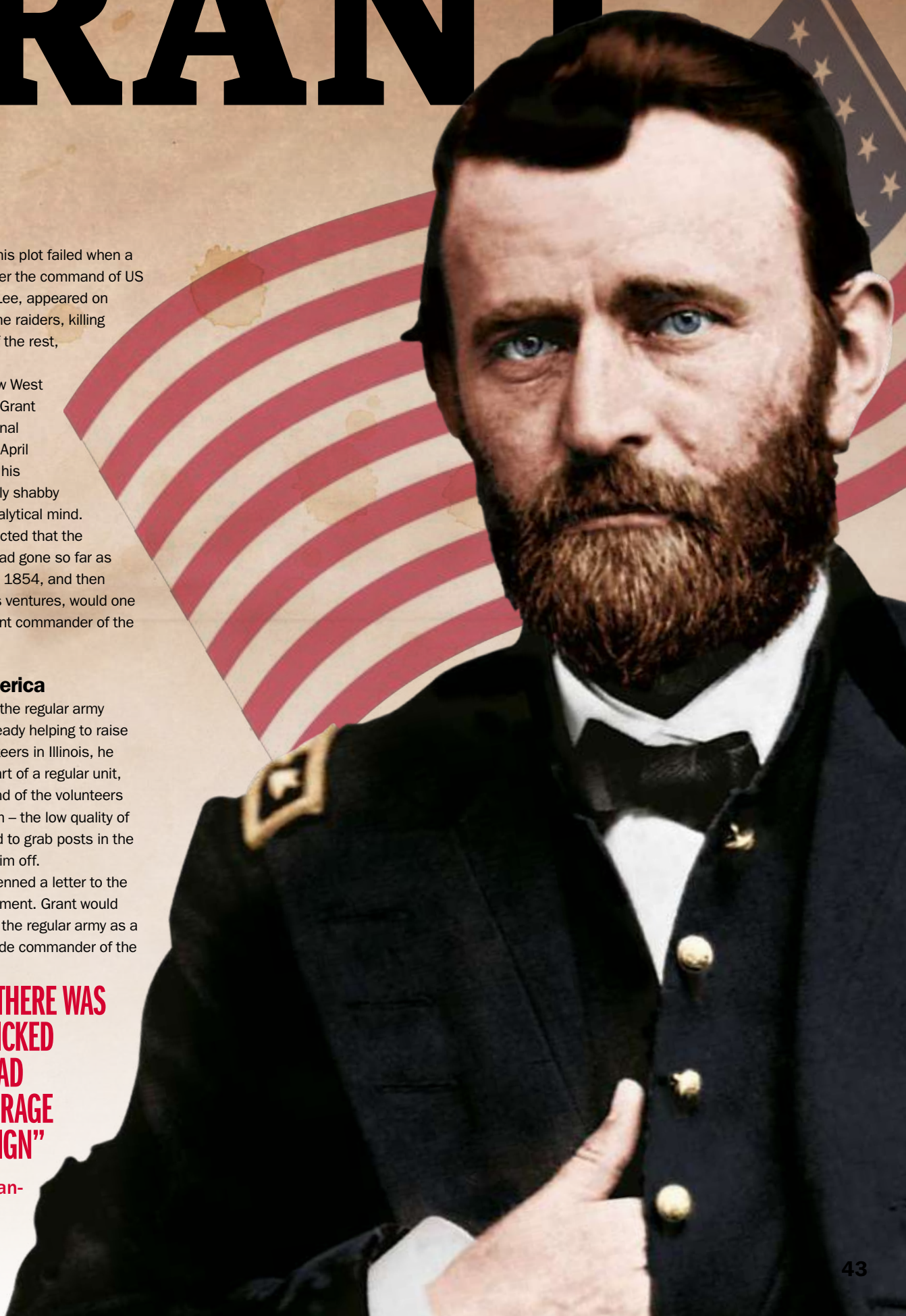
War comes to America

Grant was eager to rejoin the regular army after the war erupted. Already helping to raise a company of state volunteers in Illinois, he much preferred to be a part of a regular unit, and turned down command of the volunteers when it was offered to him – the low quality of the politicians who tended to grab posts in the volunteer regiments put him off.

On 24 May 1861, he penned a letter to the army requesting reinstatement. Grant would be given a commission in the regular army as a brigadier general, and made commander of the

**"I DO NOT THINK THERE WAS
EVER A MORE WICKED
WAR... ONLY I HAD
NOT MORAL COURAGE
ENOUGH TO RESIGN"**

**Grant on the Mexican-
American War**



THE CIVIL WAR

district of south-east Missouri. In February 1861, he scored the first real victory of the war for the Union by capturing rebel-held Fort Donelson on the Mississippi in Tennessee.

For his part, Lee was displeased with the Southern move toward secession, which he thought disastrous. He was forced to choose between his cherished Virginia home state and his country. Lee had even been marked out for the command of a Federal army being formed to return the secessionist states back under US control, but he still chose Virginia.

When his state voted to secede, Lee resigned from the US Army, saying that he “could take no part in an invasion of the Southern States.” By then he had served in the army, including his time at West Point, for some 35 years.

General Lee and the Army of Northern Virginia

The South would have to fight an uphill battle,

The first major battle of the civil war, the First Battle of Bull Run, was a Confederate victory



MEXICAN-AMERICAN WAR

THE PRECURSOR TO CIVIL WAR ALLOWED LEE AND GRANT TO CUT THEIR TEETH ON THE BATTLEFIELD

The USA's war with Mexico, from 1846-48, had its origins in the question of the annexation of Texas. The state had won its independence from Mexico in April 1836 at the Battle of San Jacinto, in which Sam Houston and 800 Texans defeated a Mexican army under President Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna. Texas wanted to be admitted into the United States, and US President James K Polk was a firm believer in the USA's 'manifest destiny' to increase its territory from the Atlantic to the Pacific. He strongly favoured the annexation of Texas, and this was accomplished in 1845 by a resolution of Congress. But Mexico had other ideas, and had never truly reconciled itself to the loss of what it considered rightfully to be one of its own provinces. In April 1846, Mexico declared war on the USA after an

American army commanded by General Zachary Taylor crossed the Texas border. The US Congress declared war on Mexico that May, but many anti-slavery elements in the North saw it as a naked attempt to win more slave territory.

Taylor moved south rapidly, and won a succession of victories over tough Mexican opposition at Palo Alto, Resaca de la Palma and Monterrey that year. In February 1847, a strong Mexican army under Santa Anna was defeated by Taylor at the Battle of Buena Vista. Also in 1847, US forces under General Winfield Scott captured the port of Veracruz, and marched inland to Mexico City, which they reached in August 1847. Along the way, Scott met and defeated Santa

Anna at Cerro Gordo that April, with victory owed in no small part to the reconnaissance performed by Captain Robert E Lee, who discovered a route around the Mexican rear. Scott was effusive in his praise of Lee, calling him “the very best officer that I ever saw in the field.” Ulysses S Grant, in the meantime, had been a supply officer with Taylor at the war's start, and then had accompanied Scott in his assault on Mexico City, where he fought bravely in taking enemy breastworks guarding the city. By September 1847, Mexico City had fallen to Scott, and the war was ended by the Treaty of Guadalupe-Hidalgo in February 1848, which saw the US take half of Mexico's territory.



After the storming of Chapultepec, Mexico City was occupied by American forces

AT WEST POINT

THE USA'S TOP MILITARY ACADEMY SCHOOLED MEN IN THE ART OF WAR

The United States Military Academy was established at West Point, New York, by President Thomas Jefferson to provide the young nation with professional officers educated in the military sciences. From then until the outbreak of civil war, West Point produced many of the USA's most illustrious soldiers.

While at West Point, an institution with notably strict discipline, Lee managed to graduate without even one demerit for an infraction of its disciplinary code during his four years there, a rarity among cadets. He graduated in second place in his class, and this enabled him to obtain a commission in the army's much sought-after Corps of Engineers.

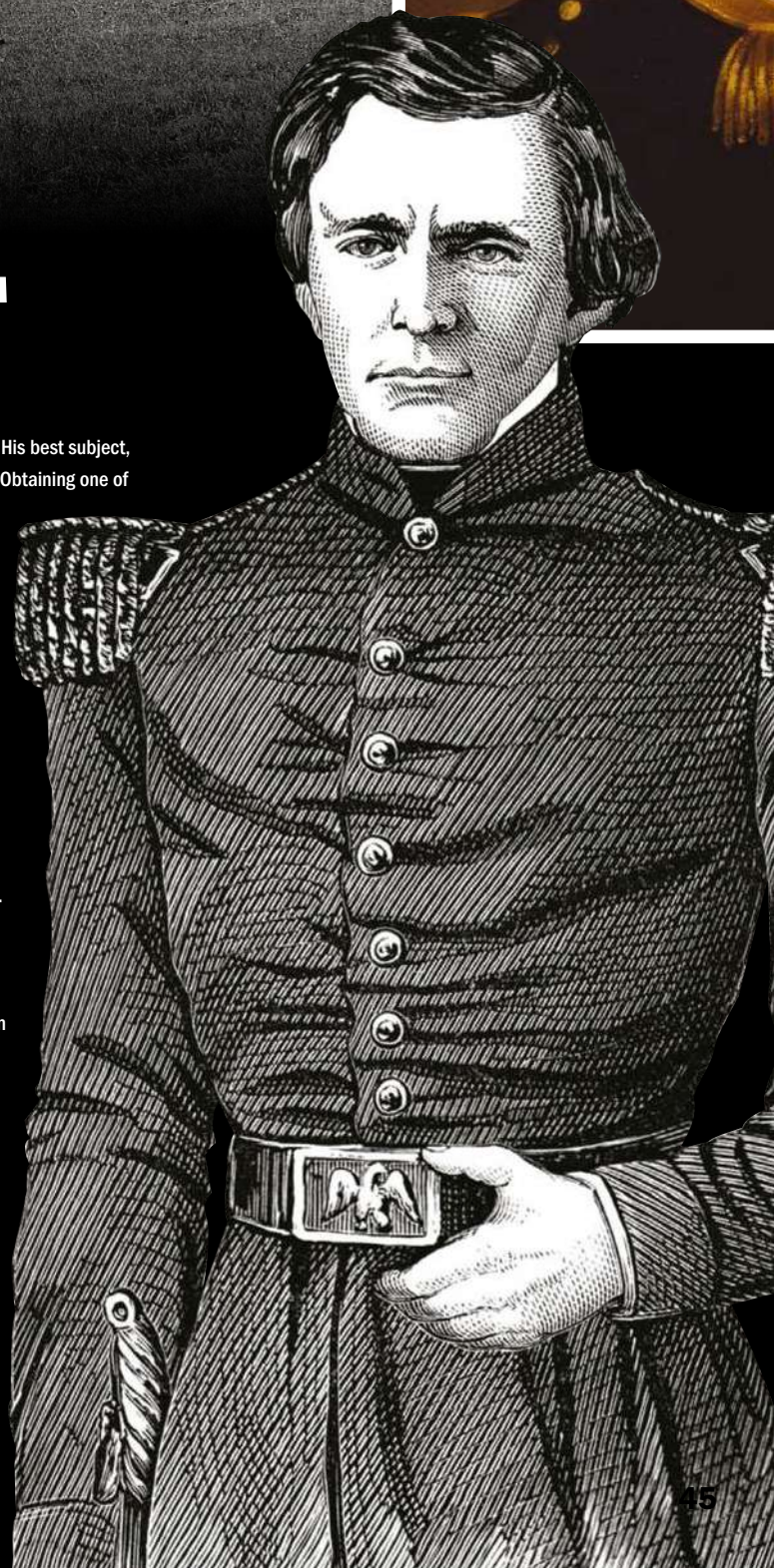
After exemplary service in Mexico, which garnered him no fewer than three brevet promotions in 1847, Lee would busy himself constructing fortifications. But Lee's military reputation was so high that he was brought back by the academy in 1852 to become its superintendent. Lee would bring his wife, Mary Anna Randolph Custis Lee, along with their seven children, to the Point when he took up his duties there.

Grant's time at the Point was a different matter entirely. He was never confident of his chances of making it through the academy's gruelling curriculum, but went anyway because he thought it would give him a chance to travel and see the USA's biggest cities, which then were New York and Philadelphia. "A military life had no charms for me, and I had not the faintest idea of staying in the army if I should be graduated, which I did not expect," he said.

As a member of the class of 1843, Grant was an undistinguished student, and he wasted a good deal of his

time reading novels instead of studying. His best subject, horsemanship, was not academic at all. Obtaining one of the coveted spots with the Corps of Engineers was too ambitious for Grant, with his mediocre grades, and so upon graduation he was commissioned as a brevet second lieutenant of the infantry.

Though Lee and Grant were never at West Point at the same time, their paths would cross in Mexico, albeit not on the battlefield. On one occasion, an unkempt and dust-covered Brevet Captain Grant went to General Winfield Scott's headquarters to make his report. His appearance was so poor that he was scolded by one of Scott's staff officers, none other than Lee. "I feel it is my duty, captain," Lee said, "to call your attention to General Scott's order that an officer reporting to headquarters should be in full uniform." Though this was perhaps not the warmest of encounters between two men who would go on to hold such important commands, it highlights one of the central tragedies spawned by Southern secession. Graduates of West Point, many of whom had served side by side in the Mexican-American War, would fight against one another in the civil war.



but it was not without advantages. At the start of the war, its soldiers were more motivated and its officer corps displayed far more talent on the battlefield, especially at the First Battle of Bull Run in July 1861, which was an entirely one-sided Southern victory.

Not least among these officers was Lee himself, who had been serving as Confederate President Jefferson Davis's military adviser since early 1862. His future opponent commanding the Army of the Potomac, Major General George B McClellan, was an able trainer of soldiers but was also extremely cautious and lacked vigour in the field. Davis placed Lee in command of the Army of Northern Virginia on 1 June 1862, after its previous commander, General Joseph Johnston, had been wounded in battle.

Few appointments to command have been of more importance. Though greatly outnumbered by McClellan, Lee attacked him again and again, and in what became known as the Seven Days

Battles in June-July 1862, drove the larger Army of the Potomac away from the Confederate capital of Richmond, Virginia. At the Second Battle of Bull Run on 30 August, he hurled the Union Army of Virginia under General John Pope back towards Washington.

Lee next took the Army of Northern Virginia into Union territory. On 17 September, he fought McClellan to a standstill at Antietam, Maryland, where both sides took horrendous casualties in the civil war's bloodiest single day. President Lincoln became so disgusted with McClellan's dithering failure to pursue Lee after the battle that he removed him from command in November 1862 and replaced him with Major General Ambrose Burnside.

Lee retreated back to Virginia, but though he had badly bloodied the Federals, Lincoln also got something he had long been waiting for: Antietam had been a victory, at least of a sort, and Lincoln issued the Emancipation

Proclamation, which declared that all slaves in rebel territory were now free. Though real freedom for the slaves of the South would be a long time in coming, the president had reframed the conflict into one in which the Union now had moral superiority over the slave-holding states of the rebellious Confederacy.

It helped Lee that his opponents were not of his calibre. He humiliated Burnside at Fredericksburg on 13 December, and then devastated Hooker's gigantic army at Chancellorsville in May 1863. However, his valiant soldiers of the Army of Northern Virginia were also suffering heavy casualties. This was a consequence of Lee's offensive spirit, always seeking to attack, but it cost his army dearly. While it would be far wrong to call Lee a butcher, the Army of Northern Virginia took more than 10,000 casualties at Antietam, 5,300 casualties at Fredericksburg, and more than 13,000 casualties at Chancellorsville – losses it could ill afford.

LEE AND GRANT'S KEY BATTLES

AS THE CONFLICT RAGED ON, THE GENERALS TRADED VICTORIES IN SPECTACULAR STYLE

The generalship of Lee and Grant featured detailed planning as well as an ability to react to unforeseen opportunities on the battlefield. Both were forceful commanders who were unafraid to take heavy casualties to win battles. Grant was often called a 'butcher' because of the costly battles that he fought, but unlike many other Union generals, he was never afraid to give battle. Whereas most Federal commanders would fight and then retire some distance to let their soldiers recover, Grant would not retreat, but keep on attacking.

In battle, Grant was always able to remain calm, and this reassured his officers. "The chief characteristic in your nature," William T Sherman wrote to him, "is the simple faith in success you have always manifested... you go into battle without hesitation... no doubts, no reserve... this made us act with confidence."

Lee was even more aggressive than Grant, perhaps because with his small army he could not afford to rely upon superior numbers or attrition to win a battle. Also, at least

in the early years of the war, Lee had the advantage of more capable subordinates, especially Stonewall Jackson. This would have meant nothing, however, had Lee been unwilling to listen to them and accept their advice. It was Jackson who came up with the plan to strike a hammer blow against Federal troops at Chancellorsville. Lee let him execute it and the result was devastating to the enemy. But Lee's offensive instinct could hurt his own army too, since even in victory his battles were always bloody affairs for his troops.

CHANCELLORSVILLE: LEE'S MASTERPIECE



The Chancellorsville campaign had begun with much confidence, at least on the part of Union General Joseph Hooker. With a vast preponderance in men and material, in late April 1863 Hooker's Army of the Potomac moved south across the Rappahannock River. Hooker did this to force Lee, who was in an entrenched position along the river just south of Fredericksburg, into the open where the much larger Union army of 120,000 would crush Lee's Army of Northern Virginia, which was just half the size.

01 Instead of attacking Lee, Hooker sets his men to digging in around the town of Chancellorsville. General Jeb Stuart's cavalry brings word to Lee that Hooker's right-wing entrenchments are utterly exposed. Jackson wants to swing around left and crush them by a flank attack that will shatter the vulnerable Yankee line.

03 Jackson's 30,000 men meet with little opposition as they make their way around the Union flank, and burst upon the Federal ranks like a thunderbolt. Jackson finds Hooker's right flank open to attack, and at 5pm, he strikes them at an angle perpendicular to the end of the Union trenches.

04 In quick succession, Union regiments break and flee as the rebels charge from west to east. First, one Federal division and then the one next to it vanish as the men run for their lives. By 7pm, darkness is falling, and in just two hours, Jackson has vaporised the Union right and inflicted some 2,400 casualties. Within a few days, Hooker will retreat back north across the Rappahannock.

02 This plan would take Jackson's 30,000 men on a 12-mile day-long end run around the Union flank, and leave Lee dangerously weak with only two divisions – just 14,000 men – to repel the 90,000 Federals now to their fore, if they decided to leave their trenches and attack. On 2 May, Lee gives Jackson the order to go ahead with his plan.

Lee at Gettysburg

While Lee's tactical acumen and battlefield sangfroid have been rightly praised, his strategic vision has occasioned a more nuanced view, and even brought him criticism. Lee tended to fight battles in a very aggressive manner, meaning he often incurred severe casualties even when winning. These were losses that could not be made good with the same speed as the more populous North could with its own.

It was Lee's decision to invade Pennsylvania, a Northern state, that led to the Battle of Gettysburg, in which the Army of Northern Virginia took on a much larger and improved Army of the Potomac. His boldness saw him fight a three-day battle from 1-3 July 1863, in which his troops were ground down by Federal soldiers. The action culminated on 3 July with Pickett's Charge, which failed and resulted only in the destruction of Lee's last fresh division, which took some 7,000 casualties.



In this painting titled 'First at Vicksburg', the Union 1st Battalion, 13th Infantry, can be seen planting its colours on Confederate positions

THE FALL OF VICKSBURG: GRANT ON THE MISSISSIPPI

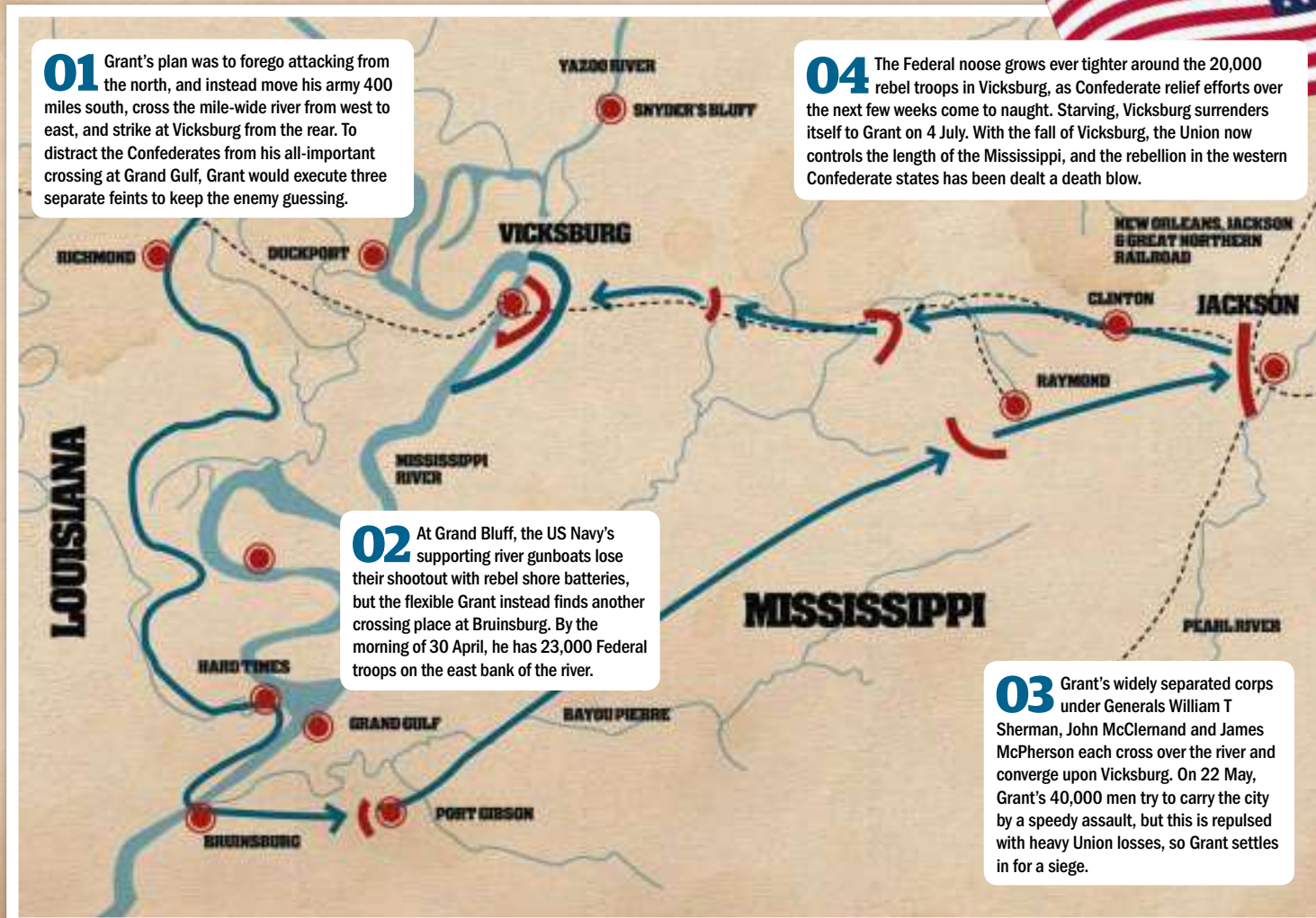
In the west in early 1863, Grant, commander of the Army of the Tennessee, had been stymied for months in his attempts to take the city of Vicksburg, Mississippi. It was strongly fortified and commanded the river from atop a high bluff above. Grant would have to get to terrain more suited to offensive operations against the city, but these could only be found to the south and east, on the other side of the Mississippi.

01 Grant's plan was to forego attacking from the north, and instead move his army 400 miles south, cross the mile-wide river from west to east, and strike at Vicksburg from the rear. To distract the Confederates from his all-important crossing at Grand Gulf, Grant would execute three separate feints to keep the enemy guessing.

04 The Federal noose grows ever tighter around the 20,000 rebel troops in Vicksburg, as Confederate relief efforts over the next few weeks come to naught. Starving, Vicksburg surrenders itself to Grant on 4 July. With the fall of Vicksburg, the Union now controls the length of the Mississippi, and the rebellion in the western Confederate states has been dealt a death blow.

02 At Grand Bluff, the US Navy's supporting river gunboats lose their shootout with rebel shore batteries, but the flexible Grant instead finds another crossing place at Bruinsburg. By the morning of 30 April, he has 23,000 Federal troops on the east bank of the river.

03 Grant's widely separated corps under Generals William T Sherman, John McClelland and James McPherson each cross over the river and converge upon Vicksburg. On 22 May, Grant's 40,000 men try to carry the city by a speedy assault, but this is repulsed with heavy Union losses, so Grant settles in for a siege.



"It is all my fault," Lee said to his exhausted troops after the failure of Pickett's Charge. Lee had lost one third of his army of 75,000, some 28,000 men, in just three days. Union General George G Meade's 90,000-man Army of the Potomac had held better and more defensible terrain from the beginning, and the overly aggressive Lee obliged him by attacking into the teeth of Federal guns. His subordinate officers had urged him not to attack, but Lee would hear none of their caution. "The enemy is there," he said, right before ordering Pickett into the attack on the third day, "and I am going to strike him."

Despite hurling his men at the Federal position, bluecoat losses in the battle were, uncharacteristically, lighter than Lee's, just 25,000. The needless invasion of Pennsylvania had accomplished nothing except the death of thousands of Lee's and Meade's soldiers, and victory for the South was further away than ever. Lee may have missed the assistance of Stonewall Jackson, but had Jackson survived long enough to have taken part at Gettysburg, he was just one man, and he and Lee could not overcome the insuperable advantages held by the North in men and resources.

Grant in command

In Grant, Lincoln had finally found a general he could rely upon to take the fight to the enemy.

"I can't spare this man," Lincoln had once said of Grant, "he fights." In March 1864, Grant was promoted to the resuscitated rank of lieutenant general and made commander of all Union armies, comprising some 550,000 men. It was now his mission to take all of the manpower and material advantages that the North had and use them to destroy the Confederacy. He was unafraid to give battle, knowing that the key to victory was defeating Confederate armies, whose losses could not be easily replaced. So he would make the rebels bleed, even though it cost his own troops terribly too. The Federal armies under Grant's command took stunningly heavy casualties in the Wilderness, at Spotsylvania Court House, North Anna and Cold Harbor in May-June 1864, but so did the Army of Northern Virginia. The defeat of the Confederacy required the death of its armies, which were still skilled and potent.

Grant's willingness to fight helped him past what might have sunk his hopes of retaining his command early in the war. He had a drinking problem of uncertain severity, with much depending upon the observer. Sherman was well aware of Grant's penchant for alcohol, as were many others, but believed that it did not hinder Grant. Though Grant "would occasionally drink too much," Sherman wrote, "when anything was

pending, he was invariably abstinent of drink." President Lincoln is said to have wished to send a barrel of the same whiskey imbibed by Grant to his other generals to get them to fight as hard.

The beginning of the end of the rebellion

In June 1864, Petersburg, Virginia – a vital rail junction through which the bulk of the Confederacy's capital of Richmond's supplies



TRUSTED LIEUTENANTS

THE MEN WHO MADE THEIR LEADERS GREAT

Both Grant and Lee would have the benefit in wartime of extremely able subordinates. For Grant, this was William Tecumseh Sherman, a fellow classmate at West Point military academy. Like Grant, Sherman had resigned from army service to pursue a civilian career, in banking, with mixed results.

The ill-tempered Sherman's early civil war career was less than splendid. He was aghast at the problems he encountered with inept, ill-trained volunteers and overly inquisitive reporters. The press made him appear to be mentally deranged, and he was relieved of command. He later found himself back in the war leading a division under the overall command of Grant at Shiloh in April 1862. Grant and Sherman would thereafter form a partnership of war and take Vicksburg on the Mississippi the next year.

The bond between Sherman and Grant was unshakable. Forged in the trying times in the beginning of the war that both men experienced, they were the closest of comrades. "He stood by me when I was crazy," Sherman would say in jest, "and I stood by him when he was drunk; and now, sir, we stand by each other always."

Lee was blessed with the aid of Thomas 'Stonewall' Jackson, a general whose military acumen was

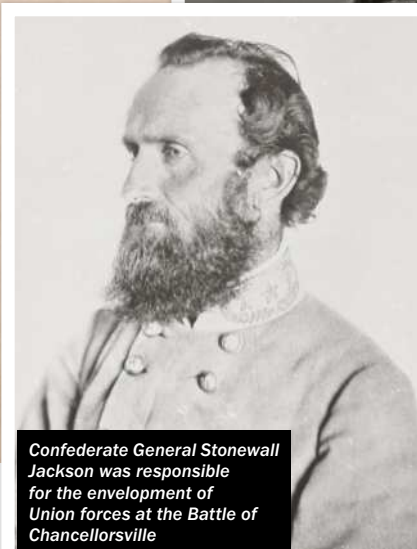
unsurpassed on either side of the war. Like Lee, Jackson was a Virginian, born in Clarksburg in 1824. His parents died while he was still young, and he was raised by an uncle. The military life appealed to him, and he was admitted to West Point's class of 1846.

He saw service during the Mexican-American War as an artillery officer and his performance was so exemplary that he was rapidly promoted from brevet lieutenant to brevet major. In 1851, he resigned from the army and took a teaching position at the Virginia Military Institute, where he taught philosophy, optics and artillery tactics. He was still teaching there when war came.

Jackson was personally opposed to secession, and though he owned six slaves, was not pro-slavery in any meaningful sense. Nevertheless, he followed his home state of Virginia out of the Union and into war, when it came. Jackson and the First Virginia Brigade he commanded at First Bull Run in July 1861 both earned the moniker 'Stonewall' for their stalwart defence against a furious Federal assault.



Union General William Sherman succeeded Grant as the Union commander in the western theatre of the war in 1864



Confederate General Stonewall Jackson was responsible for the envelopment of Union forces at the Battle of Chancellorsville

moved – was besieged by Grant. If the city was to be captured, Lee would have to either fight Grant in open country or allow Richmond to fall to Union forces. The Army of the Potomac tried and failed to take Petersburg by storm, and then settled down into a formal siege with trenches dug all around it. Though the bloody siege would last for months, Grant had effectively pinned Lee down, and through constant attrition, the small Confederate Army of Northern Virginia was whittled away.

Meanwhile, in the west, Sherman was hard at work driving the rebel army of General Joseph Johnston out of Tennessee and into Georgia, where he took Atlanta. The 62,000-strong Army of the Tennessee then began its great march through Georgia and the Carolinas in the middle of November 1864. Rebel armies could always retreat away from him, and destroying them was next to impossible, so Sherman had to destroy the South's ability, and even willingness, to make war. Having already taken Atlanta, he forgot about his supply lines and started out into untouched Georgia countryside, where his men would live off the land. Along a broad swathe of territory 60 miles wide, bluecoats burned farms and crops, ripped up railway tracks, and caused all sorts of havoc among an outraged but impotent Southern public. Lee, still beset by Grant at Petersburg, could do nothing to help.

After a movement of some 250 miles, Sherman's men arrived at Savannah, on the Atlantic coast, on 21 December. Georgia was a ruin, and out of the war. From Savannah, Sherman's men continued on through the Carolinas, burning as they marched. This was 'total war'. The South could not withstand much more of the same.

Back at Petersburg, the siege ground on, consuming more and more men like coals in a furnace. By early April 1865, Lee's position in the city was untenable, and on 1 April, he withdrew his troops, and warned the Confederate government in Richmond that he could no longer protect the capital. On 2 April, Grant mounted an attack on the weakened rebel defence works, and his 60,000 men rolled over the mere 20,000 left behind by Lee. Petersburg fell that same day, and Richmond was in Grant's hands by the next. The matter of most importance to Grant now was defeating Lee's Army of Northern Virginia, which was in the open and vulnerable. Lee understood better than anyone else just how badly his ill-fed and poorly clad men had suffered, and that his army was surrounded by Union troops. The end of the Army of Northern Virginia was at hand.

Appomattox Court House

On 9 April 1865, after an exchange of messages, Grant and Lee met at the McLean house in Appomattox Court House to formalise the

THE BALANCE OF POWER, NORTH AND SOUTH

THE GENIUS OF GENERALS ALONE WASN'T ENOUGH FOR VICTORY

The North had tremendous latent advantages over the South. It had far more people, and thus could both put more soldiers into the field and replace losses more easily. The Union also possessed three times as much railway track as the South. Its industrial development far surpassed that of the South, which had retained a largely agrarian economy. The North could make most of its own muskets and cannons, for example, and could buy arms from Europe to make up any shortfall. The US Navy's naval blockade of Southern ports would choke off almost all Confederate imports except for a handful of blockade runners of negligible significance.

Diplomatically, the support and recognition that the Southern states expected from Europe, especially Britain, never materialised. This was mainly because of the Southern over-estimation of the importance of cotton. Many Southerners had thought that when the supply of cotton from the South was disrupted by war, the shortage would cause the British to bring about a negotiated settlement that resulted in the recognition of the Confederacy's independence. Instead, British importers found other sources for cotton, and the South was left without allies or significant diplomatic support.



The tactically inconclusive Battle of Spotsylvania Court House saw 32,000 Union and Confederate casualties

surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia. In a grand irony, Major Wilmer McLean's farm in Manassas had been fought over at the war's beginning back in April 1861 during the First Battle of Bull Run. The major had taken his family to Appomattox, where he thought they could avoid the rest of the war. Now, in April 1865, it was ending in his home.

Arriving first, Lee, perfectly attired, as was his custom, rode up on his horse, Traveller, to the McLean house where he would meet Grant. Arriving afterwards, Grant, by contrast, was dressed very simply, and was not even wearing a sword. Sat in the parlour, they talked a bit about

their experiences in Mexico, decades before, and then at Lee's prompting, got down to business.

Grant's terms were that Lee's surrendered officers and men should be released on parole, never to fight again until exchanged (which would never happen as the war was over) and that the rebels' weapons would be turned over to Federal forces. Lee agreed, and their terms were put in writing. As Lee departed after the proceedings were concluded, Grant and the other Union officers present raised their hats in salute. Lee did likewise, and rode back to his army. Lee's war was over, and soon the civil war would be at an end too.

Men collect the dead after the Battle of Gettysburg





General William Tecumseh Sherman led Union armies on long and destructive marches through the Confederacy during the American Civil War



WILLIAM TECUMSEH SHERMAN

MAKING GEORGIA HOWL

The implacable General William T Sherman
brought the South to its knees

YEARS ACTIVE: 1840-1853; 1861-1884
CONFLICTS: SECOND SEMINOLE WAR, MEXICAN-AMERICAN WAR, AMERICAN CIVIL WAR, INDIAN WARS
RANK: GENERAL OF THE ARMY

William Tecumseh Sherman was born in Lancaster, Ohio in 1820, one of 11 children of an Ohio judge who died, deeply in debt, when Sherman was just nine. The boy was taken in by Thomas and Maria Ewing, a wealthy couple who lived nearby. He attended West Point, graduating sixth in his class of 1840. Thomas Ewing would himself serve in the US Senate as senator from Ohio.

In 1840, as a commissioned second lieutenant in the US Army, Sherman would serve in Florida during the Second Seminole War. He was in California during the Mexican-American War, but missed out on the actual fighting in Mexico.

In 1850 he married Ellen Ewing, the daughter of the Ewings with whom he had been raised, and they had several children together. Ellen was not happy with his ill-paid Army post, and so Sherman resigned his commission in

1853 and took up the management of the San Francisco branch of a St Louis-headquartered bank. Despite his conscientious efforts, the San Francisco branch was closed, as was the New York branch that Sherman was afterward sent to run. In Sherman's words, he was "out of the army and out of employment" altogether. A real-estate management venture in Kansas brought only failure as well. In 1859, he took up the post of superintendent at a military academy in Alexandria, Louisiana, but would have to resign from that too when the Civil War erupted in April 1861. He returned to the North, and asked for and was given a post as the commander of a regiment of regulars with the rank of colonel in the Union Army that May.

Few in the North anticipated that the war would last long. 'On to Richmond' and 'Forward to Richmond' were to be seen in many Northern newspapers, urged in the mistaken belief that the capture of the capital of the rebellious Confederacy would be accomplished rapidly.

Sherman was himself extremely pessimistic about the prospects for a swift Union victory. His apprehensions were profound and were not helped by the lax attitudes he saw in the volunteers of the newly formed Union army, detecting in them a worrying lack of seriousness and commitment.

Sherman was in command of four regiments at the disastrous First Battle of Bull Run on 12 July 1861, which ended with the shameful flight of much of the Union army from the battlefield. Afterward, he gained notoriety in the early stages of the war for unfortunate reasons.

The stress of these early weeks and months made Sherman, a man already filled with tremendous nervous energy, appear all the more anxious. He was made the Union's commander for the Department of the Cumberland in Kentucky. Sherman was prone to extreme overestimates of Confederate strength and boldness, a consequence of his nerves. The press, which he disliked intensely,



MARCHING THROUGH GEORGIA

Sherman's march across Georgia wreaked untold havoc on the Confederate war machine and helped the Union win the war

The capture of Atlanta by Sherman's soldiers on 2 September 1864 was of enormous significance, especially by boosting President Abraham Lincoln to re-election that November. With Atlanta in Union hands, Sherman contemplated his next move. He was sure to begin his grand raid through Georgia, as he and Grant had agreed, but he kept his ultimate destination, either the Atlantic or the Gulf of Mexico, to himself. He knew that as a raider, keeping the enemy guessing as to where he was going was to his advantage.

The raid, Sherman knew, would not be a 'purely military or strategic' affair; it would have a political dimension as well. The damage he would cause in Georgia was not simply to achieve military goals but also to destroy the Confederate enemy's will to carry on the war.

Cutting himself off from his own lines of communication, on 15 November, at the head of some 60,000 troops, Sherman began his great march toward Savannah on the Atlantic coast, brushing aside ineffectual Confederate opposition along the way. Sherman could manoeuvre freely because, with his soldiers living off the land, foraging for whatever they needed, he was unencumbered by long supply lines to look after. The destruction visited on the Southern military assets and the Georgian populace was immense, with a 480km (300mi)-long trail of ruin 65km (40mi) in width left behind Sherman's high-unstoppable soldiers.

About \$100 million in damage was inflicted on the march to Savannah, which Sherman reached on 21 December. This included 320km (200mi) of ripped-up rail tracks, the capture of 7,000 mules and horses, the destruction of 90,000 bales of cotton, and the wrecking of countless warehouses, factories, mills, and other buildings critical to the Confederate war effort, plus untold miseries that the Georgians themselves had to endure. The age of total war had begun.



Union troops destroy rail tracks during the march across Georgia



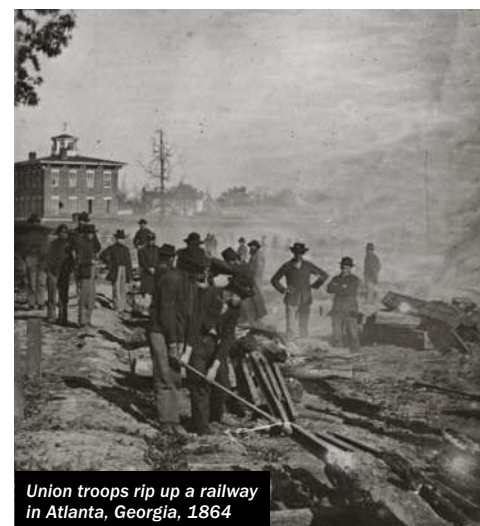
Sherman commanded Union troops at the First Battle of Bull Run in July 1861

bothered him to no end with their importune questioning about confidential military matters. His behaviour became erratic. He foresaw a need for 60,000 troops to adequately defend his area of responsibility and 200,000 for him to conduct offensive operations. These were figures beyond anyone else's imagination at this stage of the war, and they alarmed his superiors. Secretary of War Simon Cameron called Sherman's request "insane". Assistant Secretary of War, Thomas W Scott, was similarly uncharitable: "Sherman's gone in the head," he said. "He's lunny".

This theme of insanity was picked up by the Northern press and the charge took on a life of its own. Newspaper reports kept coming, saying Sherman was crazy. Sherman did, in fact, appear to be on the verge of a nervous breakdown. He had been working himself to the point of exhaustion, and was getting very little sleep. He was replaced in command of the Cumberland district and sank into depression, even harbouring thoughts of suicide.

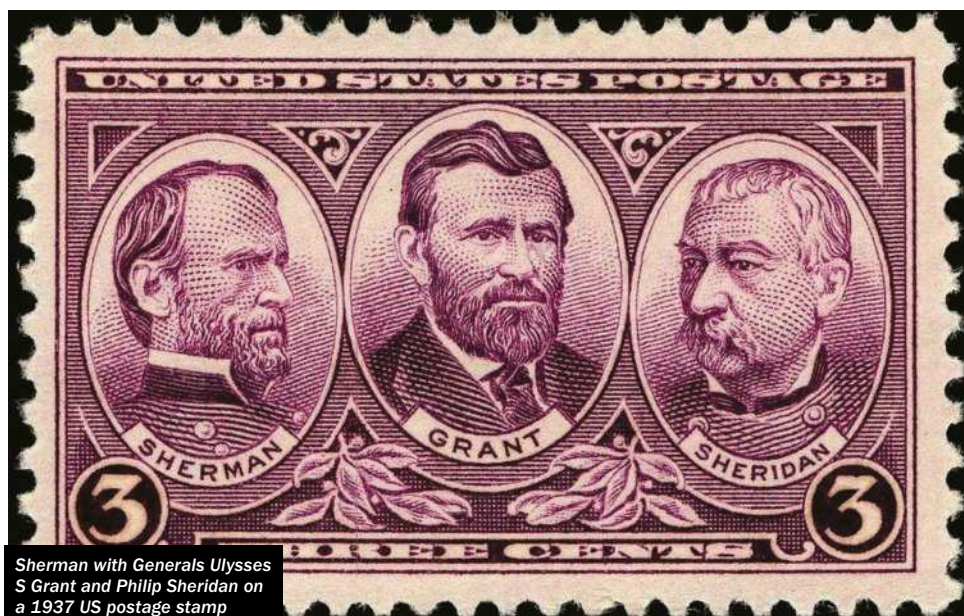
The wobbly Sherman was next made an inspector of Union troops in the vicinity of Sedalia, Missouri. His reports insisted that a massive Confederate attack was in the offing, and he was soon judged unfit for command. Sherman took a 20-day leave of absence from the Army and his nerves thereafter stabilised, but he had fallen to pieces under pressure. A 9 December 1861 report in *The New York Times* said Sherman's "disorders have removed him, perhaps permanently, from command". His fortunes had reached a nadir, but they were now set to improve, though he could not know it yet.

Sherman had not been forgotten and would not remain on the shelf for very long. He received the command of a division of Union troops. In early April 1862 he was surprised by a Confederate attack at Shiloh, Tennessee. He regained his footing quickly and formed a good defensive position. He fought back hard, giving ground stingily. Nonetheless, he thought the Union army would have to retreat. On the next morning, Sherman went to see his commanding officer, Major General Ulysses S Grant. He found Grant standing beside a tree, puffing on a cigar, seemingly unfazed by the brutal first day of fighting of the Battle of Shiloh. "Well, Grant, we've had the devil's own day, haven't we?" Sherman asked Grant. "Lick 'em tomorrow though," Grant replied. Later that day, Grant knocked the Confederates back, resulting in a Union victory, albeit a costly one. Sherman's leadership in combat had been nothing short of outstanding, and his earlier blunder in being surprised on the first day of battle was overlooked. Sherman was promoted to major general afterward.



Union troops rip up a railway in Atlanta, Georgia, 1864

"THIS THEME OF INSANITY WAS PICKED UP BY THE NORTHERN PRESS AND THE CHARGE TOOK ON A LIFE OF ITS OWN"



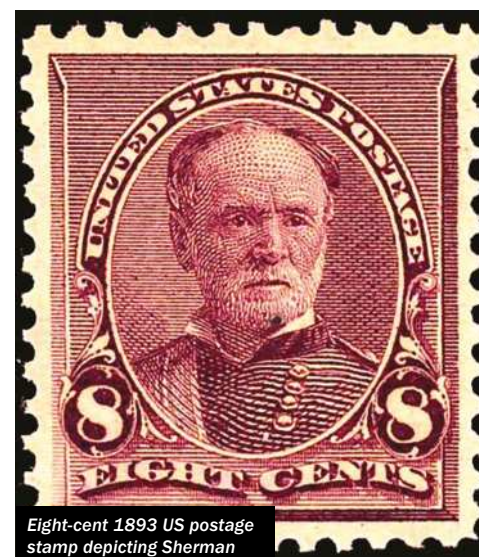
Sherman with Generals Ulysses S Grant and Philip Sheridan on a 1937 US postage stamp

Sherman would find a kindred spirit in Grant, and the two would become fast friends, though they were very different men. Where Sherman was intellectual and excitable, Grant was intuitive and steady. One thing they both had in common was a hostility to the press, for Grant had also had a testy relationship with the newspapermen. They were unbreakably loyal to one another. Sherman would once joke about their relationship that hard-drinking Grant had “stood by me when I was crazy, and I stood by him when he was drunk; and now [...] we stand by each other always.”

Sherman would make an excellent and complementary partner for Grant. The first great operation of their partnership came at Vicksburg, a city overlooking the Mississippi River. It was, after the fall of New Orleans and several other ports earlier that year, the sole Confederate stronghold on the river. Capturing it would give the Union full control over riverine traffic and deny communications between Confederate states to the west of it with those to the east.

In late-1862, Grant made it his mission to capture the city. It would be a daunting task. Called the ‘Gibraltar of the West’, the city was formidably protected by geography. It was situated on a sharp double-bend in the river, which caused river craft to slow as they approached, leaving them exposed to Confederate gunnery. The city rested on heights that soared 60 metres (200 feet) above and its northern approaches were shielded from assault by a swamp. These natural obstacles were bolstered by a powerful garrison.

Sherman, Grant’s subordinate at this time, took four divisions south of Vicksburg by river to make an assault from the Chickasaw Bluffs, but three days of attempts, beginning 26 December 1862, all failed. Vicksburg proved impossible to take for a long time, and Grant’s operation continued into 1863. Sherman was placed in command of the newly organised XV Corps and at Grant’s direction, he began digging a canal that would bypass the portion of the river that ran below Vicksburg and its lethal guns. The project was a failure as the



Eight-cent 1893 US postage stamp depicting Sherman

Mississippi’s waters could not be contained. Another attempt to get south of the Vicksburg via Steele’s Bayou was an abject failure.

Grant realised he would have to send his men downriver by boat, braving Vicksburg’s artillery, so that he could get south so that they could make a proper assault on the fortress. Sherman aided Grant’s landings below Vicksburg by making a diversionary attack on Haynes Bluff, on the Chickasaw River, which was a great success. He next moved his own corps south and rejoined Grant. On 14 May, Sherman seized Jackson, Mississippi. The Union army then moved on to Vicksburg itself, and Sherman was set to guard against an attack from the east by nearby Confederate forces under General Joseph Johnston. The stronghold’s fate was sealed by Union entrenchments and it ultimately surrendered on 4 July 1863.

Sherman was next employed with XV Corps at the Battle of Chattanooga, which ended in a Union victory. XV Corps spent January and February 1864 conducting raids against Rebel positions on the Mississippi. Sherman led a huge raid of 21,000 men some 240



THE SURRENDER OF JOE JOHNSTON

After Robert E Lee had surrendered the Army of Northern Virginia to Grant at Appomattox on 9 April, there still remained at large General Joseph Johnston’s Confederate Army of Tennessee. Johnston sent a message to Sherman via courier, which was received on 14 April. Johnston wanted to discuss surrender terms. They agreed to meet on 17 April at Durham Station, North Carolina.

Both generals were interested in ending the fighting, with Johnston acknowledging that Sherman’s army was far stronger than his own. Sherman also wanted to avoid a guerilla war if Johnston’s army fractured without a formal surrender. Johnston requested the terms that Grant had given recently to Lee. Johnston also asked for an additional day’s time so that he could acquire

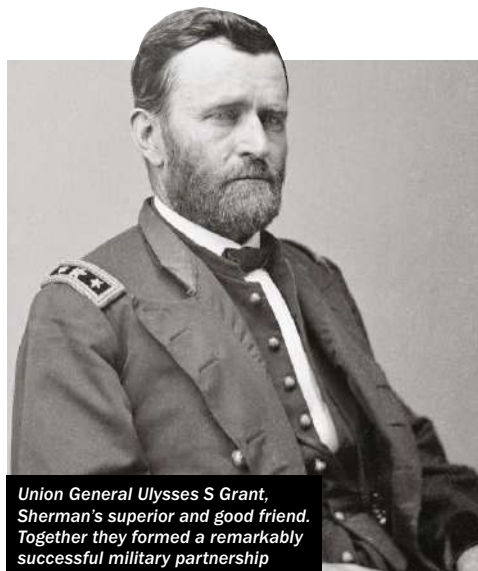
the necessary authority to surrender all of the Confederacy’s remaining armies, not just his own. Sherman granted this request, and they would meet again the next day, 18 April.

The next morning, word of Lincoln’s assassination on the 14th reached Sherman. Sherman was worried that the president’s murder might inflame feelings so much they would lead to a disaster. He broke the news to Johnston, who, visibly stricken, called the act a disgrace.

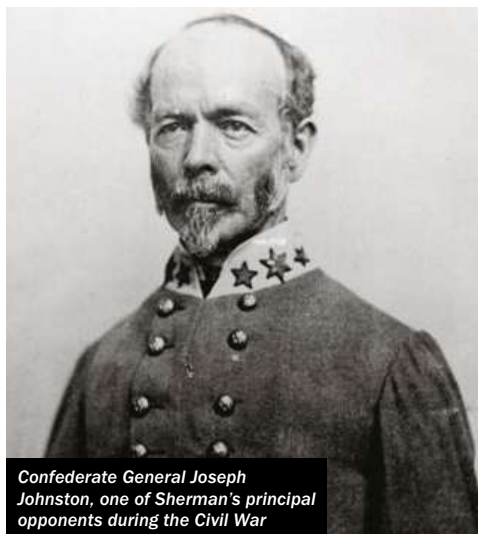
Fortunately, a surrender was still possible and Sherman delivered his terms, which were notably generous, in writing to Johnston. Surprisingly, Sherman permitted the Confederate soldiers to keep their personal weapons, to be turned in once they reached their home states.



Confederate General Joseph Johnston surrenders the Army of Tennessee to Union General William T Sherman on 18 April 1865



Union General Ulysses S. Grant, Sherman's superior and good friend. Together they formed a remarkably successful military partnership



Confederate General Joseph Johnston, one of Sherman's principal opponents during the Civil War

“EVERY SQUARE MILE OF TERRITORY HAD TO BE GUARDED BY UNION TROOPS AND BROUGHT VICTORY NO CLOSER”

pass across the land, the war closed in behind and leaves the same enemy behind.’ Moving Union supplies by rail through an unpacified, rebel-infested rear area would be impossible.

In place of the inefficient strategy of controlling territory, Grant and Sherman decided to seek victory through raiding, similar to what had been done by Sherman in the Meridian campaign. These would not be small-scale cavalry attacks, but tremendous ventures involving whole armies marching over the South, destroying the enemy's supply and transportation networks. Grant instructed Sherman to “get into the interior of the enemy's country as far as you can, inflicting all the damage you can.” The raids would involve infantry and engineers who had the time and skills necessary to wreck Southern infrastructure, such as railway bridges, arsenals, factories, hospitals, supply depots and other physical structures required by the Confederate war effort. Sherman would take the lead in implementing the new raiding strategy in 1864.

Sherman, with his three armies – the Army of the Cumberland under General George Thomas; the Army of the Tennessee under General James McPherson; and General John Schofield's Army of the Ohio – launched an offensive on 7 May. Their aim was to defeat General Joseph Johnston's Confederate Army of Tennessee, which was at Dalton, Georgia.

Sherman caught up with Johnston at Kennesaw Mountain in Georgia. On 27 June 1864, his armies attacked along a ten-mile front against heavily entrenched Confederate troops and were repulsed with heavy losses. Another way round Johnston's defenses was found to Marietta, Georgia. Sherman loaded

ten days' worth of supplies and made a daring flanking move on 7 July. Johnston, once he became aware he was about to be outflanked, evacuated his trenches on Kennesaw Mountain. Sherman's willingness to take a big risk and ability to move rapidly into the enemy's rear area to exploit an opening had won him a battle without having to pay more butcher's bills by driving them out with further, costly, frontal assaults.

Sherman next moved against Atlanta and fought several small battles outside the city in July 1864. During August, he laid siege. By 2 September, Confederate forces had abandoned Atlanta. His next operation would be dramatic and stunning in its results. Sherman, in a telegram to Grant, promised that he would “make Georgia howl”, and he was as good as his word. ‘Sherman's March’, as the move through Georgia would become known, would sear itself into American memory, North and South. It would result in a wide swath of destruction left behind the Union army as it made its way to Savannah, Georgia. Southern transportation networks, weapons factories, and untold mountains of supplies were smashed or destroyed along the way. Atlanta itself would suffer a terrible fate. Upon his departure that November, Sherman directed the rearguard of his army to set the city on fire. He would leave nothing of value behind him that the enemy might use.

Reaching Savannah on the Atlantic coast on 21 December 1864, Sherman's epic march concluded, at only a small cost in casualties. Sherman sent a telegram to President Abraham Lincoln presenting the city to him as a Christmas present. His troops took possession of 150 guns, mounds of ammunition, and

kilometres (150 miles) from Vicksburg to Meridian, Mississippi. He did not bother to worry about supply lines, instead moving freely, having his men forage for what they needed. He met scant Confederate opposition. His mission completed, he marched all the way back to Vicksburg having wrecked 61 bridges, 185 kilometres (115 miles) of rail track, and 20 locomotives. Meridian itself, with its arsenals, depots, and storehouses, was left an utter ruin. The Meridian raid would be test run for what would come later that year.

On 18 March 1864, he replaced Grant, who had been promoted to lieutenant general and brought east to Washington, DC to assume command of all Union armies, as commander of the Military Division of the Mississippi.

The strategy Grant and Sherman adopted in 1864 was a simple one: a strategy of raiding to bring the Confederacy to its knees. “He was to go for Lee, and I was to go for Joe Johnston,” Sherman said of their grand design. Their focus was not on wresting territory away from the Confederacy. That had proven to be more costly than it was worth. Every square mile had to be guarded by Union troops and brought victory no closer. Sherman complained that ‘our armies



A Confederate artillery piece emplaced at Vicksburg, 1863



WAR IS HELL

The realities of war were cruel, uncompromising and difficult to bear for any normal human, and Sherman was abundantly aware of this

Sherman had no illusions about the horrors of war, seeing them as a natural product of armed conflict. This shaped his attitude toward how war against the rebellious Confederacy should be made.

"War is cruelty," he admonished the city fathers of conquered Atlanta, Georgia in a letter he wrote soon after its fall. "You might as well appeal against the thunderstorm as against these terrible hardships of war. They are inevitable, and the only way the people of Atlanta can hope once more to live in peace and quiet at home to stop the war."

Years later, at a speech given at the Michigan Military Academy, Sherman declared "War is at

best barbarism [...] Its glory is moonshine [...] War is hell." Those last words have become forever linked to Sherman. They also encapsulate the attitude that led to Sherman conducting what became known as 'total war', in which anything that could help the enemy keep up the fight became an acceptable target of Union operations.

The distinction between strictly military targets and civilian ones eroded almost completely. The blurring would continue in the 20th century, when cities were subjected to extensive aerial bombardment because of their significance for the enemy's war effort.



Columbia, South Carolina burned on 17 February 1865 during Sherman's march through the Carolinas

25,000 bales of cotton, all of which would be denied to the Confederate war effort.

Where should Sherman strike next? Grant wanted him to come up north by ship to help him against Lee, with whom Grant was engaged in brutal combat at Petersburg, Virginia. Sherman had another idea. He would march again, this time through the Carolinas, of 440 kilometres (270 miles) from Savannah to Raleigh, North Carolina. Once he had finished off the remaining Confederates in the Carolinas, he would come to Grant's assistance in Virginia.

A practical concern – a lack of transport ships – settled the matter in favour of another march. Leaving Savannah on 1 February 1865, Sherman headed north, encountering little opposition. Columbia, South Carolina, like Atlanta, would be consumed by flame on the night of 17 February. Some of the fires were

started by Union troops, but others had already been lit by Confederates who had burned bales of cotton to keep them out of Northern hands. There was a desultory encounter with the remnants of the Confederate Army of Tennessee under General Joseph Johnston on 20 March, with Johnston retiring once the full weight of Sherman's much larger army was brought to bear.

On 27 March, Sherman had the chance to meet personally with Grant, their first face-to-face encounter in a long while. Sherman found Grant at City Point, Virginia. President Lincoln was also there, on a steamboat named *River Queen*. They held a discussion with the president over two days, centring on how to bring the war to a speedy finish.

The war was in its last moments. Grant broke through at Petersburg and was soon accepting the surrender of Confederate General

Robert E Lee at Appomattox Courthouse on 9 April 1865. Sherman's war would last a bit longer, with him taking the surrender of General Joseph Johnston's Army of Tennessee on 18 April in Durham Station, North Carolina.

The Civil War was over, but Sherman's military career would continue for many more years. He was promoted to the rank of lieutenant general in 1866 and was given the command of the Department of the Missouri. He became the US Army's top commander in 1869, with the rank of general of the army, once Grant became president the same year. Sherman would remain in that post until 1883, overseeing the many Indian Wars that US troops engaged in as the nation continued its westward expansion in the years after the Civil War. Sherman retired from the US Army in 1884. He died at the age of 71 on 14 February 1891 in New York City.



Union troops in action at the Battle of Shiloh, April 1862

STONEWALL JACKSON



Confederate General Thomas Jonathan Jackson earned the nickname 'Stonewall' during the First Battle of Bull Run in July 1861



STONEWALL JACKSON

MAKING HIS STAND

A brilliant tactician, Stonewall Jackson became a legend during the American Civil War, often marching and fighting against a numerically superior enemy

YEARS ACTIVE: 1846-1863
CONFLICTS: MEXICAN WAR; AMERICAN CIVIL WAR
RANK: LIEUTENANT GENERAL

A legend during his lifetime, Thomas Jonathan Jackson might at first have seemed an unlikely individual to achieve widespread fame and the grudging respect of his adversaries as a leader of men in wartime.

He was a devout man of Christian faith who neither drank alcohol nor smoked, eccentric to the point of absurdity, stern and sometimes cold, but he became an icon of military leadership, his name synonymous with steadfast courage, and his sacrifice remains a glittering chapter in the lost cause of the Confederate States of America.

In the heat of a midsummer day, Jackson's star rose amid the chaos of combat. On 21 July 1861, at the First Battle of Bull Run, the Confederate Army was pressed nearly to the breaking point as Union troops assailed its positions on Henry House Hill during the initial major battle of the American Civil War. As the Confederate line wavered, General Barnard Bee of South Carolina tried to inspire his men. Looking around, he spotted a brigade of Virginia troops steadied against the tide under their cool commander. Bee was reported to have

shouted, "There stands Jackson like a stone wall! Rally behind the Virginians!"

Confederate fortunes at Bull Run turned favourably, and the Union army was routed, fleeing the field for the safety of Washington, DC. As the confusion subsided, Bee's cry circulated, and Thomas Jonathan Jackson became 'Stonewall'. Jackson went on to scourge the enemy, achieving tremendous feats of arms during several major battles, and gained lasting fame as the most capable subordinate of General Robert E Lee, the illustrious commander of the Army of Northern Virginia. Leading the Army's II Corps, Jackson displayed an intuitive understanding of Lee's sometimes vague orders, and the pair became one of the most celebrated command teams in military history.

Jackson was born on 21 January 1824 in Clarksburg, Virginia, now part of the state of West Virginia. His older sister and father, attorney Jonathan Jackson, died in a typhoid

fever epidemic when Jackson was only two years old, and his mother, Julia Neale Jackson, struggled to feed her three remaining small children. After Julia remarried, her second husband, attorney Blake Woodson, seemed to care little for his stepchildren, and they were parcelled out to live with relatives. In 1830 Julia Jackson died giving birth to Thomas's half-brother William Woodson.

As a youth, Jackson lived primarily with his uncle, Cummins Jackson, who owned a grist mill. Education was not formalised, and young Thomas was mostly self taught. He learned to read and was said to have bargained with one of his uncle's slaves to provide him with pine knots in exchange for learning to read. Although it was against the law to teach a slave to read or write, the bargain was struck, and Jackson used the light of the burning pine knots to read borrowed books in the evenings. In 1842, he received an appointment to the US Military Academy at West Point, New York, and though

"HE BECAME AN ICON OF MILITARY LEADERSHIP, HIS NAME SYNONYMOUS WITH STEADFAST COURAGE"



THE ARM OF STONEWALL JACKSON

The curious story of Stonewall Jackson's shattered and amputated limb remains something of a mystery today

Shortly after General Stonewall Jackson was mortally wounded by friendly fire at Chancellorsville, he was removed to a field hospital four miles from the scene. Dr Hunter Holmes McGuire performed the amputation of his shattered arm, one of many the surgeon had completed amid the carnage. However, this severed arm was not discarded.

Jackson's personal chaplain, Reverend Beverly Tucker Lacy, made arrangements to move the wounded general to safety at Guinea Station and noticed a small bundle just outside the hospital tent. It was Jackson's left arm, wrapped and waiting for burial in a common trench with other soldiers' amputated limbs. Instead, Lacy carried the severed arm a mile to Ellwood, the plantation owned by his brother James, where it was interred in the family cemetery.

Afterward, the exact whereabouts of Stonewall Jackson's left arm have become the topic of conjecture. A year after its burial, the Battle of the Wilderness swirled around Ellwood, and Union soldiers were reported to have exhumed the arm and possibly reburied it elsewhere. Nevertheless, in 1903, James Power Smith, a former member of Jackson's staff, erected a simple marker reading, "ARM OF STONEWALL JACKSON MAY 3, 1863," on the original site.

In 1921 a group of US Marines on manoeuvres were said to have exhumed at least part of the arm and reburied it in a metal box. Subsequent metal detecting efforts by the National Park Service have failed to locate such a box. While the integrity of the site may have been compromised after many years, the famous arm probably still rests somewhere in this cemetery.



This simple marker commemorates the original burial site of General Stonewall Jackson's amputated left arm in a northern Virginia cemetery



Stonewall Jackson and his staff survey the battlefield at First Bull Run, the initial major engagement of the Civil War



An 1846 graduate of the US Military Academy at West Point, Stonewall Jackson displayed great courage during the Mexican War

"JACKSON SERVED DURING THE MEXICAN WAR, DISTINGUISHING HIMSELF IN AT THE BATTLE OF CHAPULTEPEC AND ELSEWHERE"

he was older than most of the cadets and endured some ridicule for his lack of education and quirky habits, he applied himself diligently and graduated in 1846, 17th in a class of 59 on the eve of the American war with Mexico.

As a young lieutenant of the 1st US Artillery, Jackson served during the Mexican War, distinguishing himself in at the Battle of Chapultepec and elsewhere. He earned two brevet (temporary) promotions, and by the end of the war held the permanent rank of 1st lieutenant. He remained in the Army until 1851. That spring he accepted a position as professor of natural and experimental philosophy and artillery tactics at the Virginia Military Institute (VMI) in Lexington, Virginia. For the next ten years he taught at VMI and was generally unpopular with his students, who called him 'Tom Fool' and mocked his strange behaviour, including severe hypochondria and a tendency to elevate one of his arms for lengthy periods because he believed his limbs were not the same length or to balance his "bodily humours". During the Civil War, he was sometimes seen on horseback with an arm raised and often sucked lemons.

During his tenure at VMI, Jackson experienced personal tragedy. He married Elinor Junkin, the daughter of a Presbyterian minister and president of nearby Washington College, in 1853. Tragically, she died giving birth to a stillborn son the following year. While mourning the loss of his wife, Jackson took an extended tour of Europe and remarried in 1857. His second wife, Mary Anna Morrison, was the daughter of the president of Davidson College in North Carolina. Their first child, a daughter, died within a month, and only their second daughter, Julia Laura, lived to adulthood.

With the outbreak of the Civil War in April 1861, Jackson accepted a commission as a colonel in the Confederate Army, organising a brigade at the former federal arsenal of Harper's Ferry. This initial command would soon earn lasting fame as the 'Stonewall Brigade', vanquishing its foe time after time and marching so swiftly cross-country that the common soldiers called themselves 'Jackson's Foot Cavalry'.

His star on the rise after First Bull Run, Jackson received promotion to major general and was given command of the Shenandoah District west of the Blue Ridge Mountains. During the spring of 1862, he conducted the masterful Valley Campaign. Always outnumbered, he led his forces against three separate Union armies. He out-marched, out-generated, and out-fought all three, preventing assistance to a major Union offensive toward Richmond during the early days of the Peninsula Campaign and thwarting attempts to move on the Confederate capital from the north and west. The Valley Campaign is still studied today as an example of tactical military genius.

Following his triumph in the Shenandoah, Jackson joined Lee's Army of Northern Virginia, taking command of II Corps. Although his performance in the ensuing Seven Days' Battles is regarded as lacklustre, his real potential as a commander became apparent during a campaign against the Union Army of Virginia in the summer. Jackson flanked the enemy, raided its stores at Manassas Junction, and then inflicted a stinging defeat at the Second Battle of Bull Run at the end of August. In September, the II Corps captured Harper's Ferry during Lee's Maryland Campaign and fought with distinction on the left of



Stonewall Jackson reels in the saddle after being mortally wounded by friendly fire on 2 May 1863 at Chancellorsville

the Confederate line at the pivotal Battle of Antietam. At the Battle of Fredericksburg in December, his command withstood a furious Union assault and helped turn a near defeat into victory.

The intuitive connection between Jackson and Lee is an enduring aspect of the Civil War. Lee trusted Jackson to evaluate a tactical situation and adapt accordingly to orders that allowed discretion. Jackson believed in Lee's strategic perspective. Nowhere was their seamless execution more apparent than during the Battle of Chancellorsville, considered Lee's masterpiece, in May 1863. The Confederate commander divided his forces in the face of a larger enemy, sending Jackson and fewer than 30,000 men to fall on the exposed right flank of the Union line northwest of Fredericksburg.

While Lee remained stationary before the enemy force, Jackson attacked like lightning, rolling up the entire Union XI Corps in a classic "hammer and anvil" manoeuvre.

Although Chancellorsville was the scene of Jackson's greatest triumph, 2 May 1863 was also a grim day for the Confederacy. As he rode forward to reconnoitre enemy troop dispositions that evening, Jackson and his entourage were mistaken for Union cavalry by soldiers of the nervous Confederate 18th North Carolina Infantry Regiment that had just arrived in the vicinity. The infantrymen fired a volley, killing several others and wounding Jackson three times. He was placed in an ambulance and carried 20 miles on rough roads to Guinea Station, his left arm amputated just below the shoulder. General Lee was distraught over

the news and exclaimed, "He has lost his left arm, but I have lost my right arm!" He wrote to his stricken lieutenant, "Could I have directed events, I would have chosen for the good of the country to be disabled in your stead."

At first the prospects for Jackson's recovery appeared favourable, but soon he developed pneumonia. He died on 10 May at the age of only 39. His last words were: "Let us cross over the river and rest under the shade of the trees." The entire South was plunged into mourning. The body was returned to Lexington, where it was buried following a solemn funeral and procession to the Presbyterian Cemetery.

Without doubt, Stonewall Jackson's life and death shaped the course of the Civil War. Lee and the Army of Northern Virginia never again found such an audacious field commander.



CONTROVERSY SURROUNDS STONEWALL'S FAMOUS NICKNAME

Was a fellow Confederate general praising Thomas Jonathan Jackson at First Bull Run or blasting his performance?

In the heat of the First Battle of Bull Run, General Barnard Bee of South Carolina shouted the famous words that bestowed the nickname 'Stonewall' on General Thomas Jonathan Jackson, a previously obscure professor at the Virginia Military Institute before the outbreak of the Civil War in 1861. While history generally endorses the story that Bee was praising the stand of Jackson's brigade on the embattled Henry House Hill, detractors assert that the South Carolinian was actually criticising his fellow officer for being slow to move forward to support the hard pressed brigades of Bee and General Francis S Bartow, which were enduring repeated Union assaults.

Bee was mortally wounded by a shell fragment mere moments after shouting his memorable exhortation and did not linger long enough to explain his intent. None of his subordinates are known to have filed battle reports referencing the context of the pronouncement.

However, Major Burnett Rhett, chief of staff of Confederate General Joseph E Johnston, was adamant that Bee was in fact criticising Jackson's performance. Nevertheless, the nickname has become symbolic of Southern valour and courage under fire. The name Stonewall Jackson is one of the most recognised in military history, and for positive reasons.



An equestrian statue of General Thomas J 'Stonewall' Jackson stands vigil on the battlefield of First Bull Run



At a sun dance ceremony on the Little Bighorn River, Sitting Bull danced for 36 hours



SITTING BULL

GUIDED BY SPIRITS

A Sioux Indian chief and spiritual leader determined to protect traditional ways of life

YEARS ACTIVE: 1866-1890
CONFLICTS: LITTLE BIGHORN
RANK: HOLY MAN

After two days of fierce fighting near the Little Bighorn River on the plains of eastern Montana in 1876, 600 men led by George Armstrong Custer were defeated by a confederation of 3,000 warriors from Native American tribes. Custer himself was killed, as were two of his brothers, a nephew and a brother-in-law. The total US casualty count was 268 dead and 55 injured. For Lakota chief and holy man Sitting Bull, this was a great victory in the violent and desperate struggle for the Sioux tribes' survival on the North American Great Plains. It was also the realisation of a vision the medicine man had experienced at a ceremony not three months earlier.

Throughout the 19th century, native Sioux tribes had been pushed further and further west as white settlers expanded into the American heartland from the colonies on the eastern seaboard. The Great Sioux wars of the 1870s culminated in the Battle of the Little Bighorn, where Custer's infamous last stand took place. The natives saw the battle as their last chance to save their homelands and they fought with desperation and determination. "The whites want a war and we will give it to

them", said Sitting Bull. After decades of seeing neighbouring tribes lose their lands to white men and being forced to live on government controlled reservations, the tribes united in their struggle for survival under the leadership of Sitting Bull, who remained defiant toward American military power and contemptuous of American promises.

Born on the Grand River in present-day South Dakota, Sitting Bull was originally named Slow by his chieftain father because he was always very careful and slow to take action. Slow grew up as a typical child in the Lakota Sioux tribe. He learned how to ride horses, shoot a bow and hunt buffalo, and he dreamt of one day becoming a great warrior. A scout who met Sitting Bull when he was still a boy described him in a later account as "a boy of rather stocky appearance, not 'straight as an arrow' like the traditional Indian. He was fearless under all circumstances, a magnificent rider, an accurate shot and capable of enduring an extraordinary amount of fatigue."

At 14, Slow joined his first war party, taking part in a battle against the Crow tribe, where he bravely charged a warrior and knocked him down. When the party returned to camp, Slow's

father gave him the name Sitting Bull in honour of his bravery. It was a name he would live up to throughout his life.

Because his tribe lived and hunted north of the early routes of western travel, Sitting Bull had little contact with white men until the 1862 Santee Sioux uprising, an armed conflict between the US and several bands of the eastern Sioux. The defeated Sioux were driven west to the plains where Sitting Bull, now a chief himself, heard what life was like on a government-controlled reservation, and began to understand that pacts with white men rarely lasted. Desperate for his people to retain their culture, traditions and sacred lands, Sitting Bull resolved to keep his tribe away from the white man's world and never to sign a treaty that would force them to live on a reservation.

Sitting Bull's disdain for treaties and reservation life soon attracted a large following, not only from the Sioux but from the Cheyenne and Arapaho tribes as well. Widely respected for his bravery and insight, he became head chief of the Lakota nation from around 1868. In early encounters with US soldiers encroaching on native territory, Sitting Bull learned their ways of fighting, strengths and weaknesses.

"THE US GOVERNMENT INCREASED ITS EFFORTS TO SUBDUDE THE TRIBES AND SENT THOUSANDS MORE CAVALRYMEN TO THE AREA"



WHAT HE WAS FIGHTING AGAINST

Indian reservations

Toward the end of the 19th century, following decades of westward expansion, the US signed treaties with surrendering Native Americans or conquered those who resisted encroachment into their homelands. In exchange for large tracts of land and the valuable natural resources they contained, the government agreed to provide reservations, off-limits to new white settlers.

The end of traditions

Beside the moral problem of depriving a people of life on their historic land, many issues plagued the reservations. Nomadic tribes, now confined, lost their means of subsistence. Farmers found themselves with land unsuitable for agriculture and hostile tribes were often forced into the same areas. The results were disastrous.

Driven to war

After treaties were made with the Plains Indians in 1861, white miners were able to cross the Great Plains by using the Bozeman Trail, with the US Army building forts along the trail to protect them. The trail ran through the Sioux' buffalo hunting grounds, making their traditional way of life almost impossible. The Sioux responded with war.

Loss of more land

In 1887, the Dawes General Allotment Act was passed. It tried to weaken traditional bonds of Indian society by making land ownership private rather than shared. The government broke up reservation land and distributed it to individuals, selling the remainder off. It reduced the remaining Native American-controlled land by about two-thirds.

Battle of Wounded Knee

When Sioux tribes protested, the US Army shot and killed at least 150 near Wounded Knee Creek in South Dakota in 1890. Because of this massacre, The Ghost Dance, a religious movement prophesying the return of buffalo herds and disappearance of the settlers, gradually died out.

He combined this analytical approach with raw courage. Once, during a battle with soldiers protecting railroad workers on the Yellowstone River, Sitting Bull led four other warriors out between the lines, sat calmly sharing a pipe with them as bullets buzzed around, before casually walking away.

However, the relative peace and tentative expansion of territory by white settlers was shattered in 1874 when gold was discovered in the Black Hills of South Dakota, an area sacred to many tribes and placed off-limits to white settlement by the Fort Laramie Treaty of 1868. Prospectors eager to make their fortune rushed to the Black Hills in spite of the treaty, provoking the Lakota to defend their land. Resultingly, the US ordered all Sioux that lived outside the Indian Reservation to move inside it. Sitting Bull refused, saying that reservations were like prisons and he would not be "shut up in a corral."

As the US forces began to hunt down the Sioux, Sitting Bull formed a war camp. In 1876, as three columns of federal troops moved into the area the Indian chief summoned the Lakota, Cheyenne and Arapaho tribes to his camp on Rosebud Creek in Montana Territory. There he led them in the sun dance ritual, offering prayers to Wakan Tanka, their Great Spirit, and slashing his arms 100 times as a sign of sacrifice. During this ceremony, he had a vision in which he saw soldiers falling into the



Native Americans were rounded up in reservations by the American government

Lakota camp like grasshoppers falling from the sky; the prophesy would become a reality at Little Bighorn three months later.

Having moved their encampment to the Little Bighorn and gained the support of more warriors, the tribes were attacked on 25 June by the 7th Cavalry under Custer, whose badly outnumbered troops first rushed the encampment, as if in fulfilment of Sitting Bull's vision, and then made a last doomed stand on a nearby ridge, where they were destroyed. The event marked the most decisive Native American victory and the worst US Army defeat in the long Plains Indian War. The demise of Custer and his men outraged many white Americans and confirmed to them their image of the Indians as wild and bloodthirsty. The US government increased its efforts to subdue the tribes and sent thousands more cavalrymen to the area. Over the next year, they relentlessly pursued the Lakota, forcing chief after chief to



Defining moment FORGING RESOLVE JULY 1864

Sitting Bull is one of the defenders when General Alfred Sully uses artillery against a Teton encampment at Killdeer Mountain. After the event he forms his resolve to keep his people away from the white man's world and never to sign a treaty that will force them to live on a reservation. Sitting Bull continually warns his followers that their survival as free Indians depends upon having free access to their traditional buffalo hunting grounds. He takes his followers to the pristine valleys of the Powder and Yellowstone rivers where buffalo and other game remain abundant.

TIMELINE

Born to the Lakota tribe

Sitting Bull or, in the Sioux language, Tatanka Yotanka, is born in the Grand River Valley in what is now South Dakota. His chieftain father, Jumping Bull, names him Slow as a child for his thoughtful and reserved nature.

1831



First battle

Sitting Bull first goes into battle in a raid on another tribe, the Crow. After the battle he earns his now-famous adult name for his bravery. 'Sitting Bull' refers to a recalcitrant bull sitting on its haunches.

1845



Learning about the white man

Because the Lakota Sioux live and hunt north of the early routes of western travel, Sitting Bull has little contact with whites until the Santee Sioux uprising in Minnesota takes place.

1862

Gaining experience

Beginning in the summer, columns of US soldiers repeatedly invaded the Powder River country. Sitting Bull has occasional encounters with them, learning their ways of fighting, their strengths and weaknesses.

1865



Sitting Bull photographed in 1885

surrender. But Sitting Bull remained defiant. In 1877 he led his band across the border into Canada, beyond the reach of the US Army, and when he was offered a pardon in exchange for settling on a reservation angrily refused.

However, living in a land without buffalo was almost impossible and finding it difficult to feed his people, Sitting Bull finally came south to surrender after four long years. He was sent to Standing Rock Reservation, and when his reception there raised fears that he might inspire a fresh uprising, was sent further down the Missouri River to Fort Randall, where he and his followers were held for nearly two years as prisoners of war. Finally, in 1883, Sitting Bull re-joined his tribe at Standing Rock. Those in charge were determined to deny the great chief any special privileges, even forcing him to work

in the fields, hoe in hand. But Sitting Bull still knew his own authority, and when a delegation of US senators came to discuss opening part of the reservation to white settlers, he spoke forcefully, though in vain, against their plan.

Two years later Sitting Bull was allowed to leave the reservation to join Buffalo Bill's Wild West Show, earning \$50 a week for riding once around the arena, in addition to whatever he could charge for his autograph and picture. There he met President Grover Cleveland as well as the famous sharpshooter Annie Oakley, who said the Sioux warrior "made a great pet of me." However, life on the road was unpleasant with crowds often hissing, while the newspapers termed Sitting Bull "as mild mannered a man as ever cut a throat or scalped a helpless woman." He stayed only four months with the show, unable to tolerate white society or the damage to his pride any longer.

Returning to Standing Rock, he lived in a cabin on the Grand River, near his birthplace. Soon after his return, he had another mystical vision. This time he saw a meadowlark alight on a hillock beside him and heard it say, "Your own people, Lakotas, will kill you."

In the autumn of 1890, a Lakota named Kicking Bear came to Sitting Bull with news of the Ghost Dance, a ceremony that promised to rid the land of white people. Lakota had already adopted the ceremony at the Pine Ridge and Rosebud Reservations, and Indian agents there had called for troops to bring the growing movement under control. At Standing Rock, the authorities feared that Sitting Bull, revered as a spiritual leader, would join the Ghost Dancers and so sent 43 Lakota policemen to bring

him in. Before dawn on 15 December 1890, the policemen burst into Sitting Bull's cabin and dragged him outside, where his followers were gathering to protect him. In the ensuing gunfight, one of the Lakota policemen put a bullet through Sitting Bull's head.

Chief Sitting Bull is remembered among the Lakota not only as an inspirational leader but also as a loving father, a gifted singer, a man always affable and friendly toward others and whose deep religious faith gave him prophetic insight and lent special power to his prayers. He inherited from his father the chieftainship of a part of the Sioux tribe, but his remarkable ascendancy over other tribes was thanks to his spiritual leadership, his talents as a politician and an unshakable determination to preserve his people's way of life.



DEFEATING CUSTER

Lieutenant Colonel George Custer is remembered for his famous 'last stand' along the Little Bighorn River. Born in Ohio in 1839, Custer graduated at the bottom of his military academy class and was court-martialled for not obeying his duties as an officer of the guard. With the Civil War raging, though, he managed to escape punishment. Custer proved himself a worthy officer in that brutal war and aged just 23 was the youngest officer ever to make the rank of general. However, after the war he was stripped of his commission.

Having enlisted in the regular Army in 1866, Custer only strengthened his reputation for not following orders. In 1868, he led an attack on a band of Southern Cheyenne, even though the tribe had given in to the demands of the US government and were flying the white flag of truce on the morning of Custer's attack.

In 1876, Custer was sent to lead a force to defeat Lakota Sioux and Northern Cheyenne warriors. On 25 June, Custer's scouts told him that a gigantic Indian village lay in the valley of the Little Bighorn River. Dismissing the scouts' claim that the village was extraordinarily large as exaggerated, Custer split his force in order to attack the encampment from two sides. However, he had miscalculated the number of Indian warriors and the depth of the river he had to cross. It took less than an hour for the Native Americans' arrows and bullets to wipe out General Custer and his men.

Defining moment

BATTLE OF THE LITTLE BIGHORN 25-26 JUNE 1876

Determined to resist US efforts to force them onto reservations, Indians under the leadership of Sitting Bull and Crazy Horse, also a Sioux chief, wipe out Lieutenant Colonel George Custer and much of his 7th Cavalry at the Battle of the Little Bighorn. It is the Indians' greatest victory and the army's worst defeat in the long and bloody Plains Indian War. Over 10,000 Indians gather in a massive camp along the southern Montana river. "We must stand together or they will kill us separately", Sitting Bull tells them.



- ★

● **Increasing influence**
Another Lakota leader, Red Cloud, signs the Fort Laramie Treaty, and then agrees to lead his people to life on a reservation. In the aftermath, Red Cloud's influence wanes and Sitting Bull's grows in turn.
1868

★ ★

● **Plains gold rush**
Gold is discovered in the Black Hills of South Dakota. The US wants access to the gold without interference from the natives. They order all Sioux living outside the Sioux Reservation to move inside it. Sitting Bull refuses.
1874

★

● **Return and surrender**
Having fled over the border to Canada after the Battle of the Little Bighorn in 1877, Sitting Bull surrenders to the US and is held as a prisoner of war for a time at Fort Randall in South Dakota Territory.
19 July 1881

★

● **Living on a reservation**
Sitting Bull is permitted to live on Standing Rock Reservation, where he continues to use his influence among the Native Americans to attempt to keep Sioux lands from being taken by the government.
1883

★

● **Travelling show**
Sitting Bull travels for a season with Buffalo Bill Cody's Wild West Show. However, he can only tolerate white company for a few months, due to their hostile behaviour toward him, and soon returns to the reservation.
1885

★

● **Death of a leader**
A US Indian agent at Fort Yates fears the Lakota leader will flee the reservation. Eight policemen and seven of Sitting Bull's supporters are killed in an ensuing fight, along with the great man himself.
15 December 1890

General Custer

Crazy Horse



A Native American portrait of Custer and Crazy Horse, whose paths always seemed destined to cross on the battlefield



CUSTER VS CRAZY HORSE

THE HORSE SOLDIERS

Though proficient in wildly contrasting forms of warfare, Custer and Crazy Horse were each among the great cavalry commanders of their day

GEORGE ARMSTRONG CUSTER

YEARS ACTIVE: 1861-1876

CONFLICTS: AMERICAN CIVIL WAR, PLAINS WARS

RANK: MAJOR GENERAL (VOLUNTEERS), LIEUTENANT COLONEL (REGULAR ARMY)

CRAZY HORSE

YEARS ACTIVE: 1853-1877

CONFLICTS: INTER-TRIBAL RAIDS, PLAINS WARS

RANK: SHIRT-WEARER

George Armstrong Custer and Crazy Horse inhabited worlds that could hardly have been more different, and yet there were striking similarities in the experiences of the two great warriors who would face each other at the Little Bighorn on 25 June 1876.

Of similar ages when they met on the battlefield, they had both enjoyed meteoric rises through the ranks of their respective societies, were both counted among the leading military figures of their day and both went into battle on horseback. For a time, they even had the same nickname.

Custer was born on 5 December 1839, in Ohio. Known as 'Autie' to his family, he was a lively, fun-loving child, raised in a large but warm family that offered security and stability. His childhood was standard for an American boy of the time. At school he learned about his nation's Manifest Destiny, which directed that

the United States should spread over the entire width of the continent, whatever or whomever might be in the way. Learning was mostly by rote and there was little room for questioning or original thought. After a brief spell as a teacher (Custer was very popular with his students) he managed to secure a place at West Point, where his military education began.

Once more, however, there was a heavy emphasis on rote learning and absolutely no leeway for an inquisitive or challenging mind. Custer is generally portrayed as a poor student and it is true that he graduated 34th out of 34 in his class – but many in his class did not graduate at all and most of Custer's problems appear to have stemmed from his high spirits. Known as a prankster, he was popular with his fellow cadets and for a time he went by the nickname of 'Curly', in response to one of several dramatic hairstyles he sported while at the academy.

Some years after Custer's birth, Crazy Horse made his appearance, probably in the Autumn of 1841 but possibly a year or two later. Where Custer had experienced rigidity and discipline, the world of a Sioux child was freewheeling and unstructured. Emphasis was placed on allowing young boys to find their own path, and they were not even given their names until they had achieved something of note. For his early years, then, Crazy Horse was known simply as 'Curly', thanks to his unusually curly hair.

Conflict was an everyday part of the Sioux world. Raiding against neighbouring tribes helped young boys develop their skills and show off their bravery, but it was almost always on a small scale. It was rare for a raid to lead to more than one or two deaths and the stealing of ponies was usually the primary aim. A Sioux youth would not be expected to take part in such raids until invited, but there was a tacit understanding that boys would be unable to

CUSTER VS CRAZY HORSE

resist the lure of battle. Most tagged along in an unofficial capacity from the age of 12, and only token efforts were made to dissuade them. Curly therefore got a much earlier exposure to violence than Custer.

There was nothing unusual in this within the context of the Sioux tradition, but Curly did stand out in other ways. Unlike the normally boastful and vain braves he associated with, Curly was introverted and quiet. At the age of 13 he embarked on a vision quest, foregoing all of the traditional preparations and therefore having a rather unsatisfactory experience that nevertheless came to shape his life. His quiet manner, restrained mode of dress and refusal to take plunder for himself after battles marked him out as an unusual brave.

In the summer of 1854 Curly killed his first enemy, but when he discovered that he had killed a woman he refused to take her scalp and was teased as a result. During the same summer, he also had his first experience with white soldiers when a 31-man party of US infantry was slaughtered near Fort Laramie (the 'Grattan Massacre'), following an altercation over the shooting by a Sioux warrior of a Mormon cow. Death on such a scale was a rare thing for a Sioux to witness and the lesson of the white man's vulnerability when outnumbered was not lost on the young Curly.

A second lesson followed quickly, with a retaliatory campaign by the US Army leading to a massacre on 3 September 1855, at the Battle of Ash Hollow. Out of 250 Native Americans in the village that was attacked, 86 were killed and 70 captured. Curly could count himself lucky that he had been away on a hunting trip at the time.

The great weakness of the Native American peoples was their inability to act in concert. With the very basis of Sioux society being the right of a man to choose and follow his own path, a unified command structure was impossible, but some steps were made towards this following Ash Hollow. A great council was planned for the following year, at Bear Butte, where the leaders could discuss their response to the growing tensions caused by the white man's encroachment on Native American lands.

In 1857, Curly tasted combat with soldiers for the first time. It was to prove a confusing incident. A medicine man dipped the hands of the Sioux warriors in icy water, claiming this would make them invulnerable to gunfire, but the charging US cavalry forces attacked with their sabres instead and scattered the braves. Shortly afterwards, the great council agreed that unified action must be taken against the white man, but no firm plans were made and the Sioux went back to their usual rituals, fighting Crow, Arapaho, Shoshoni and Pawnee



A young Custer looks uncomfortable in his tightly fitted West Point cadet's uniform. The academy's strict rules proved just as constricting



No photographs were ever taken of Crazy Horse and many portraits (such as this one) fail to capture his understated mode of dress



THE BATTLE OF WASHITA RIVER

One of Custer's most notorious actions took place during the winter of 1868, when he attacked the village of the peaceful Indian chief Black Kettle along the banks of the Washita River, in the Colorado Territory.

Black Kettle had made strenuous efforts to rein in his impetuous braves, but there was no way of effectively preventing a man from following his own path and attacks on white settlers continued despite the regular signing of peace treaties.

A winter campaign in 1868 was deliberately intended to deprive the tribes of their shelter and supplies and force them to surrender. On the night of 26 November, Custer and his 7th Cavalry were led to Black Kettle's camp. The chief had ignored warnings that cavalry were approaching

and intended to move his people closer to further tribal camps the following day, but it was already too late. Custer's men attacked at dawn, from four different directions at the same time.

The 574 troopers charged into the sleepy camp (allegedly to the tune of 'Gary Owen'), and scattered the village. Only one cavalryman was killed in the charge, although 20 more lost their lives when Major Joel Elliott made an ill-judged grab for personal glory and ran into an ambush.

At least 12 Cheyenne warriors were killed, as well as more than 70 women and children, and over 50 prisoners were taken, to be used as a human shield to ensure the cavalrymen could retire safely. The 'battle' earned Custer the loathing of the Cheyenne people from that point on.



The Battle of Washita River was a one-sided affair that many simply termed a massacre



The iconic portrait of Custer, in his flamboyant and eccentric uniform

rather than US soldiers. It was a familiar, even comforting way of life and brought contentment and purpose to the Sioux tribes. It was following an action against the Arapaho, in which Curly charged his enemy three times, that he was given his official name. His father handed over the name that he had carried himself. From now on, the father would be known as 'Worm'. Curly would be known as 'Crazy Horse'.

This existence, with war an ever-present but far from consuming element of a deeply satisfying and sustainable way of life, was helped by the massive violence unleashed during the Civil War, which kept the white man occupied with his own troubles and also gave the young Custer his first experience of battle.

Having lagged behind Crazy Horse for the early years of his life – in terms of military experience at least – Custer now received a thorough grounding in a form of warfare that would have been totally alien, in fact abhorrent, to the Sioux. The striking fact about the styles of warfare engaged in by the two young men was that each would have been considered sorely lacking in the eyes of the other's society. Crazy Horse would have been considered a borderline coward for avoiding the large-scale engagements that the armies of the Civil War sought out, while Custer would have been considered some sort of monstrosity for the appalling casualties that his men suffered under his command.

“HAVING BEEN WORRIED THAT HE MIGHT MISS OUT ON THE CHANCE OF GLORY, CUSTER THREW HIMSELF INTO THE CIVIL WAR”



Custer, pictured during the Civil War with a former West Point comrade turned Confederate officer

In fact, both men were supremely brave in their own worlds – it's just that there was an awful lot more killing in Custer's. Having been worried that he might miss out on the chance of glory, Custer threw himself into the Civil War with a rare gusto that betrayed a genuine love of combat. With a knack for being in the right place at the right time, 'Custer's Luck' played its part in his rise in the Army of the Potomac, but he made an awful lot of that luck himself by quite simply acting the part of the perfect cavalry commander. He was supposed to be dashing, supposed to be reckless and supposed to inspire fear in his enemies, and Custer did all that and more.

Having graduated from West Point on 24 June 1861, he was lucky to meet General Winfield Scott while awaiting his first posting. Entrusted to carry a message for the old general, he ended up taking part in the First Battle of Bull Run while many of his graduating class were drilling recruits. Promoted to Captain, he took a position on the staff of George B McClellan, commanding the Army of the Potomac.

McClellan took a real shine to the young Custer, calling him, "simply a reckless, gallant boy, undeterred by fatigue, unconscious of fear". McClellan's assessment captured the better parts of Custer's character. He burned with a fierce energy, always led his men from the front and was aggressive to a fault. But all this came at a price. While Custer rose to great heights of personal fame, the cavalry units that he led suffered among the highest casualty rates of the war. At Gettysburg he lost 481 men out of his 1,700-strong brigade, but this somehow did not seem particularly excessive in a war that was notable for its terrible slaughter on the battlefield.



Blood-letting on the scale of the Battle of Gettysburg was something undreamed of in Native American culture

Eccentric in his dress (he wore boots captured from a Confederate that were too big for him, a slouch hat and a bright red neckerchief, as well as growing his hair to a luxuriant length), he was desperate to make general before the war ended. He achieved this personal goal in June 1863, when he was promoted to brigadier general in the Volunteer Army. As the youngest American to reach that rank in the nation's history, he was something of a talisman. The 'boy general' captured American hearts and imaginations. Surrounding himself with friends, he fostered an air of camaraderie, shared the privations of his men when on campaign and charged at the enemy wherever he found them, whatever their numbers might be.

Crazy Horse took part in many military expeditions during the same period, but they were on a completely different scale. There is also very little hard evidence of when he fought, or where, with many clashes with rival tribes known only by a simple name, with none of the associated dates that chart Custer's rise so definitively. He performed bravely, favouring hit-and-run tactics, and was protective of the lives of his men. Like Custer, he led from the front, but unlike Custer he did not leave a trail of broken bodies to mark his progress. Personal glory, although important, was pursued for its own sake, not for the laurels it could elicit from a grateful society.

The other major difference was that Crazy Horse's battles were never linked into a major campaign. Low-level, guerrilla-style warfare was an end in itself and there was no big picture or grand plan. The Sioux did not fight to annihilate their rivals, nor was there genuine hatred for the other tribes they clashed with.

By 1865, Crazy Horse was a leader among his people, elected as one of four 'shirt-

wearers', who would enforce the orders of a ruling council of 'Big Bellies'. It punctuated a period in which clashes with the white man were becoming more common. The Sand Creek Massacre of 1864 had forced the Sioux to launch retaliatory raids, in which Crazy Horse took part, and in the summer of 1865 a concerted campaign was attempted. With minor raids staged to keep the white settlers and soldiers off balance, a two-pronged offensive involving thousands of braves was planned. Crazy Horse also played his part in a rescue mission to save as many as 2,000 peaceful Native Americans being marched from Fort Laramie to Fort Kearney in Nebraska. Not only was the march to go through hostile Pawnee territory, the 135-man soldier escort also terrorised the marchers.

The rescue of the 'Laramie Loafers', as the Native Americans were disparagingly known, led to retaliatory strikes in turn, but the major Sioux-Cheyenne offensive was intended to break this pattern of small-scale conflict. It failed, with 3,000 braves managing to kill just eight soldiers after a tedious cat-and-mouse game. It was a lesson in how hard it would be

for the Native Americans to match the war-making capabilities of their opponents.

The end of the Civil War therefore saw both Custer and Crazy Horse at the heights of their power. Crazy Horse, however, envisioned nothing more than a continuation of his traditional way of life. For Custer, the end of war would bring frustration and inactivity. On the last day of the conflict, a Confederate officer delivered the perfect description of the young cavalry commander at his zenith: "...a cavalcade rode up briskly," noted Major General Joseph B. Kershaw. "A spare, lithe, sinewy figure; bright, dark, quick-moving blue eyes; florid complexion, light, wavy curls, high cheek-bones, firm-set teeth – a jaunty close-fitting cavalry jacket, large top-boots, Spanish spurs, golden aiguillettes, a serviceable sabre... a quick nervous movement, an air telling of the habit of command – announced the redoubtable Custer."

Starting in 1866, the Sioux waged a three-year campaign to protect their lands along the Powder River. Under the overall command of Red Cloud, with Crazy Horse an important leader, the campaign brought together former enemies including the Arapaho, Sans Arcs and northern Cheyenne. Even the most committed enemy, the Crows, were almost wooed on board. Attacking travellers on the Bozeman Trail as well as tormenting the garrison of Fort Phil Kearny, the fighting was punctuated by the Battle of the Hundred-in-the-Hands (known by Americans as the 'Fetterman Fight' or 'Fetterman Massacre'), where 81 US soldiers were ambushed, killed and hideously mutilated by as many as 2,000 Native American warriors. It was a stunning event for both sides and it would prove to be a watershed moment. From that point, Custer and Crazy Horse were on a collision course.

Crazy Horse, meanwhile, continued to build his own reputation, and to learn about the fighting prowess of the white man. At the Wagon Box Fight, in August 1867, as many as 2,000 braves were shocked at the fire-power



A Native American artist's depiction of the death of Crazy Horse



The great Sioux leader Sitting Bull, who joined Buffalo Bill's Wild West show after the Plains Wars



The Sioux chief Red Cloud. The early part of the Plains Wars is often referred to as 'Red Cloud's War'

of the US Army's new breech-loading rifles, and Crazy Horse became convinced that attacking soldiers in a defensive position was futile.

The same year, Custer was posted to the Great Plains to play his part in the pacification of the Native American tribes. Based at Fort Riley in Kansas, and heading the newly formed 7th Cavalry Regiment, Custer began to carve out a new reputation, that of a fearsome Indian fighter. As part of the regular Army, his rank may have been deflated (he was now a lieutenant colonel) but his ambition and instincts had not. The early days of his career on the plains was frustrating, as he learned that catching up with his enemy was a near-impossible task. He also learnt, however, that once he could get hold of a war party there could be only one outcome. His faith in the superiority of his men, and the apparent infallibility of his primary tactic of charging at the earliest opportunity, led to a sense of invincibility that was dangerous and would eventually prove tragic. In Custer's mind, even the knowledge that he was being drawn into an ambush was no cause for concern, but rather a welcome opportunity to bring his enemy to battle.

Unlike the massed battles of the Civil War, though, the fighting in the Plains Wars was not glamorous and yielded few heroes. So-called 'battles' were often sadly one-sided affairs, such as Custer's destruction of a Cheyenne village at the Battle of Washita River in the winter of 1868. The war was unpopular, partly because the nation had had its fill of bloodshed over the previous years, and partly because there was a strong element in American society that was ashamed of the way the native tribes were being treated.



A Native American depiction of the battle features plenty of dead cavalymen, and a distinctive figure blazing away with twin pistols

It was five years later that Custer first encountered the Sioux. Following the three-year campaign against white settlers, the situation on the Great Plains had calmed into a truce that lasted until 1873, when plans were set in motion to bring the Plains Wars to a conclusion. A string of forts was under construction to pen in the northern Sioux and Custer took his men to Fort Abraham Lincoln with the primary goal of protecting the groups of workers on the Northern Pacific Railroad.

On 4 August that year, the two great warriors met for the first time. Attempting to lure an 85-man party under Custer's command into an ambush (the decoys may have included Crazy Horse himself, as he was a recognised expert at the tactic), they succeeded in drawing away a body of 20 soldiers, with Custer at their head. Intrigued by the antics of the six decoys, Custer pushed ahead with two orderlies, ordering the



THE BATTLE OF THE ROSEBUD

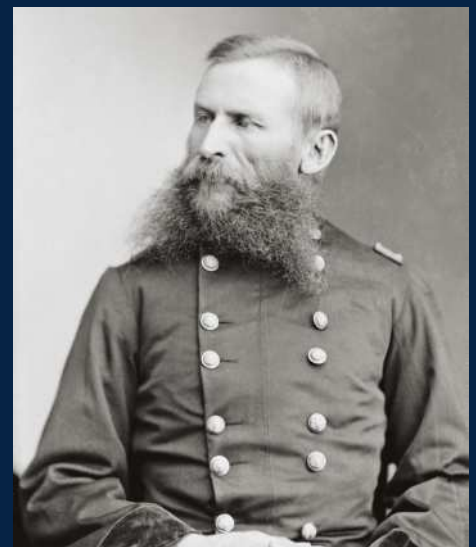
Crazy Horse almost secured a stunning victory days before the Battle of the Little Bighorn

With an outbreak of hostilities imminent in the summer of 1876, Crazy Horse commanded an expedition that had a direct impact on the forthcoming clash at the Little Bighorn. Brigadier General George Crook was spotted by Cheyenne scouts on 16 June, commanding a column of a thousand soldiers and more than 200 Indian allies. Crazy Horse insisted on leading an attack on the column, and moved out with 1,500 braves. Accompanied by Sitting Bull, who was in a pitiful condition having just completed a gruelling sun dance that had yielded a vision foretelling a great Indian victory, the warriors moved out.

Crook's column was just one of three intended to round up hostiles. Custer's 7th Cavalry was part of Alfred Terry's 2,700-strong force, while a third column, numbering just 450 men, was headed by John Gibbon.

On the morning of 17 June, Crazy Horse was spotted by Crow scouts working for the US soldiers, and a disorganised battle broke out. Uncharacteristically, the Sioux and Cheyenne warriors pressed their charges aggressively and at several times appeared about to sweep the entire column away. Crook made the unfathomable decision to detach eight companies of his men to probe towards the suspected Indian camp nearby, and Crazy Horse recognised this as a chance to score a stunning victory. Just as he prepared to attack the remaining men, however, the detachment returned and the battle petered out.

Crook had lost 28 dead and 56 wounded. Crazy Horse had lost 36 braves, with 63 more wounded, but the price was worth paying. Crook withdrew and played no part in the climactic struggle at the Little Bighorn just days later.



George Crook came close to a complete disaster at the Battle of the Rosebud

rest of his detachment to wait. The decoys played a patient game, and Custer was tempted to trigger the suspected ambush to bring on an action, but Cheyenne warriors in the Indian party, recognising Custer (whom they called 'Long Hair') from the Battle of Washita River, were unable to restrain themselves. A wild charge of around 300 braves thundered down upon Custer and his orderlies, who fled back to their detachment and set up a defensive line. After checking the charge with a well-timed volley, Custer was reinforced by the remainder of his command. With 85 men he was more than a match for the Sioux and Cheyenne and decided the issue with a full-blooded charge. Custer's belief in the inability of the Native Americans to stand up to determined offensive action was reinforced.

The Plains Wars were coming to their conclusion. The discovery of gold (naturally enough, it was Custer's men who discovered it) in the Black Hills of the Dakota Territory triggered a massive influx of prospectors. An attempt to buy the land from the Sioux failed and a major confrontation was inevitable. The US government insisted that all Sioux and Arapaho must make their way to mandated reservations by the end of January 1876. Many did so, but thousands remained at large, unwilling to give up their lands, their freedom and their way of life. To discuss the situation, Sitting Bull called for a massive gathering of the tribes, with Sioux, Arapaho and Cheyenne attending. At the same time as the gathering, Custer was setting out from Fort Abraham Lincoln with his 7th Cavalry to force recalcitrant tribes into their reservations.

At the Battle of the Little Bighorn, Custer broke a basic rule by dividing his force in the face of a superior enemy – but the key factor was that he did not consider the enemy, despite their vast numbers, to be superior. Everything Custer had learned over his spectacular and violent career had convinced him that the only way to deal with a foe was to charge him. The 208 officers and men under his command were to pay the price for this misconception, as a charge led by Crazy Horse and Sitting Bull destroyed his defensive line and led either to a quick massacre or a heroic 'last stand', depending on which version of the legend you believe.

The boy general had fallen, and perhaps the only truly great name to emerge on the American side during the Plains Wars had secured his place in history. For Crazy Horse, there was to be no such glorious death. After surrendering in 1877, he was bayoneted during an altercation and died of his wounds. His body was turned over to his parents and it is uncertain where he was finally buried.

BATTLE OF LITTLE BIGHORN (25–26 JUNE 1876)

EXPECTING AN EASY VICTORY, LT COL GEORGE CUSTER BUNGLED HIS ATTACK AGAINST THE SIOUX ENCAMPED ALONG THE LITTLE BIGHORN RIVER

06 CUSTER OUTFLANKED

Crazy Horse was able to lead his warriors on a flanking movement, something unheard of previously as braves normally headed directly for their enemy. As Custer was attacked by 1,500 warriors under Gall, he headed for high ground, realising he was now on the defensive. As his men neared the top of what is now called 'Custer's Hill', Crazy Horse appeared on top of it with 1,000 warriors.

07 CUSTER'S LAST STAND

With some braves armed with rifles and many more with bows, arrows and spears, they charged the small number of troops. 'We circled all around them,' recalled Cheyenne leader, Two Moons, 'swirling like water round a stone.' The fight lasted no more than 20 minutes and the wounded were finished off with edged weapons.

05 CUSTER'S BLUNDER

Custer led his troopers two miles north in order to strike the rear of the Sioux-Cheyenne camp. He again divided his force by sending the right wing (consisting of three companies: the C, I and L) under Captain Myles Keogh north along the ridgeline, while he led the left wing (consisting of E and F companies) north in search of a ford to reach the north end of the enemy encampment. Failing to find the north end of the vast camp, he returned to the ridge. Leaving Keogh atop Calhoun Hill, Custer attempted to lead his two companies north.

02 CRAZY HORSE BIDES HIS TIME

Custer's movements were being carefully tracked by scouts, but the splitting of Reno's troops was a surprise. Crazy Horse kept a wary eye on Custer's progress but also organised a defensive line to meet the unexpected challenge from Reno.

01 DIVISION INTO THREE BATTALIONS

Seventh Cavalry Regiment commander Lt Col George Armstrong Custer divided his 12 companies into three battalions. He ordered Major Marcus Reno to take three companies (A, G, and M) and attack the encampment on the valley floor from the south. Custer took five companies to strike the enemy rear from the east. He ordered Captain Frederick Benteen to take three companies (D, H and K) and block the enemy's retreat by moving around it to the west. Captain Thomas McDougall guarded the pack train with Company B.

08 RENO'S STAND

Benteen and McDougall joined Reno, and the remaining seven companies withstood repeated attacks on the second day. When the Native American chiefs learned that enemy reinforcements were soon going to arrive, they broke contact and withdrew.

04 CUSTER'S BLUNDER

Believing his command risked destruction by remaining in the timber, Reno ordered a mounted retreat to the east bank. The survivors took up a defensive position in a shallow depression on the ridge east of the river.

03 RENO'S FAILED CHARGE

Reno deployed at 3.00pm. After a brief charge, the men dismounted and formed a skirmish line. The Sioux warriors counterattacked in strength, forcing Reno to withdraw to a stand of timber along the river.



Admiral William Sims led the US Navy during operations in World War I and championed innovation early in the 20th century



WILLIAM SIMS

THE INNOVATIVE ADMIRAL

Never one to shy away from controversy, Admiral William Sims advocated sweeping change and led US naval forces in Europe in World War I

YEARS ACTIVE: 1880-1922
CONFLICTS: SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR, WWI
RANK: ADMIRAL

Perhaps the most significant threat to the survival of Great Britain and the Allied cause during World War I did not come on land, but from beneath the sea. German submarines, or U-boats, ranged the Atlantic Ocean and took a heavy toll in shipping bound for the British Isles, threatening to not only sever the lifeline of supplies that allowed the country to wage war, but possibly even to starve Great Britain into submission.

The neutral United States, too, felt the sting of the U-boat when the Cunard passenger liner *Lusitania* was torpedoed by U-20 off the coast of Ireland's Old Head of Kinsale in May 1915. American lives were lost, and the implications were ominous. Still, it took two years before the German policy of "unrestricted submarine warfare" helped push the US into World War I.

When America joined the Allied cause, its naval commander, first of all US vessels operating from Britain and then all naval assets in European waters, was Admiral William Sowden Sims. Already well known in the international naval community, Sims had made a name for himself as an outspoken advocate for the modernisation of the US

Navy. His clarion call for reforms touched every aspect of Navy life, from drill and supply to gunnery tactics and warship construction. During a career that eventually spanned more than 40 years, Sims garnered powerful friends in both naval and political circles, but also cultivated the enmity of prominent opponents. His contribution to the modern US Navy, however, cannot be denied, and he is rightfully remembered as one of the most influential American naval officers of the 20th century.

Sims was born in Port Hope, Ontario, Canada, on 15 October 1858 to American parents, while his father, an engineer, was working there. When Sims was 14, the family relocated to Pennsylvania, and four years later he gained an appointment to the United States Naval Academy in Annapolis, Maryland. After graduating in 1880, he spent nearly all of the ensuing 17 years on sea duty. He wrote standardised navigational texts that remained in use with the US Navy and the American Merchant Marine for decades.

Following years of shipboard service, Sims was posted as naval attaché to France and then to Imperial Russia and Spain. While he served in Paris, the Spanish-American War

broke out, and the lieutenant organised an espionage network to gather information on the enemy. He also observed the training and operations of foreign navies, assessed the quality of their warships, and took note of their best practices – particularly the accuracy of naval gunnery, which at times had been proven deficient under combat conditions.

In 1901, Sims transferred to the Far East and served on the staff of the commander-in-chief of the Asiatic Fleet. While there, he



Admiral William Sims (left) and assistant secretary of the navy and future president Franklin D. Roosevelt pause for a photographer

“THE NAVY LIEUTENANT ORGANISED AN ESPIONAGE NETWORK TO GATHER INFORMATION ON THE ENEMY”



Admiral William Sims stands second from right with King George V and future King Edward VIII aboard a warship

became acquainted with Captain Percy Scott of the British Royal Navy. Scott had already become well known for his innovative gunnery technique of continuous aiming fire. Sims was impressed and, despite his relatively low rank, began a campaign for reform in US Navy gunnery that grew continuously louder. While senior naval officers discounted his ideas and displayed no sense of urgency in implementing improvements to gunfire accuracy, ship designs and other aspects of naval performance, Sims wrote directly to President Theodore Roosevelt to express his views.

This astonishing breach of protocol shocked the naval establishment but it achieved its desired effect. Roosevelt was a former assistant secretary of the Navy, and in 1902

he appointed Sims to the post of inspector of naval gunnery. A promotion to lieutenant commander soon followed. Sims remained in the position and as a naval aide to the president for the next seven years. During that time, he returned to the Far East as an observer during the Russo-Japanese War that raged between 1904 and 1905. He became familiar with the Japanese naval successes during the battles of Port Arthur and Tsushima and

took note of its discipline and tactical prowess – which in part were patterned after the British Royal Navy. Sims' respect for the Royal Navy continued to grow, and he developed a reputation as a confirmed Anglophile.

Sims' perspective raised concerns in the US government and he was an outspoken advocate for cooperation with the Royal Navy, even after being appointed commander of the battleship USS Minnesota in 1909. The next year he startled his colleagues with an announcement that in the event of war, the United States would supply naval support to Great Britain. Such a foreign policy statement was far above his pay grade, and politicians and high-ranking military officers distanced themselves from him for a time. Nevertheless, his naval acumen was sharp, and the results of his tenure as inspector of naval gunnery were spectacular. Assessments revealed that the implementation of new gunnery techniques had improved American naval fire an astonishing 500 per cent in general accuracy and 100 per cent in hits based on rate of fire.

Despite the acrimony his political perspective had aroused, Sims remained in high regard. In 1911 he was promoted to captain, and he graduated from the Naval War College in Newport, Rhode Island, in 1912. The following summer he was appointed commander of the Atlantic Destroyer Flotilla, a post that provided experience that he put to good use in the coming years. In March 1916, he was given command of the new battleship USS Nevada, a super dreadnought that represented the latest in American naval design and ingenuity. Its 14-inch main guns were the heaviest aboard a warship of the US Navy at the time.

While World War I raged in Europe, Sims was promoted to rear admiral in 1916 and assumed the post of president of the Naval War College in February 1917. He was sent to Britain as US liaison officer to the Royal Navy only weeks



THE WAKE ISLAND MEETING

Admiral William Sims praised the performance of young college men who served with the US Navy during the Great War

In December 1922, just weeks after he had reached the mandatory retirement age of 64 and ended his career with the US Navy, Admiral William Sims wrote an article for *The Crimson*, the newspaper of Harvard University. He lauded the talents and contributions of young college men from across the nation, and particularly those from prestigious Ivy League schools, who entered naval service during World War I.

"I must admit that I was at first in doubt as to whether they would prove really useful in a profession involving not only such a variety of technical knowledge, but particularly actual experience to acquire the practical skill necessary to perform their naval duties under new conditions," he wrote. "I soon found that, notwithstanding my 40 years' experience in training young men in the naval service, I had been greatly mistaken regarding the capacity of these fine young chaps to literally absorb the necessary knowledge and acquire the training essential to effective service."

Sims went on to detail some of the exploits of these young navy men and noted, "Boys of Yale, Harvard, Princeton – indeed practically every college and university in the land – had dropped their books, left the comfort of their fraternity houses, and abandoned their athletic fields, eager for the great adventure against the Hun." The admiral was unaware at the time that many of these boys would be called upon once again in a quarter of a century, in their capacities as naval officers to contribute to another victory at sea during World War II.



A destroyer of the US Navy lays a smokescreen while protecting a transatlantic convoy during World War I



Wearing the temporary rank of vice admiral, William Sims visits Africa after serving two years of duty in Europe

later as the United States entered the Great War in April. He was promoted to the temporary grade of vice admiral, and as American involvement in the war escalated he was given command of American naval forces in Britain. Swiftly, in May he was designated commander of all US Navy forces operating in Europe.

Sims rapidly developed a close collaboration with the senior commanders of Britain's Royal Navy and became a key figure in dealing with the German U-boat menace that threatened the war effort. Both troop transport and supply ships were vulnerable to attack, and Sims became a staunch supporter of the convoy system, the gathering of numerous transport vessels together along with warship escorts to provide mutual protection against submarine attack. Ships steaming alone across the Atlantic Ocean had been particularly easy prey for the U-boats. Sims also urged an accelerated building programme for destroyers. These "greyhounds" of the high seas were the backbone of anti-submarine defences, and Sims had grown to appreciate their importance during his recent command of the Atlantic Destroyer Flotilla.

Again, Sims' pro-British sentiments had a profound influence on the response to his recommendations regarding cooperation with the Royal Navy. He was a staunch supporter of British First Sea Lord Sir John Jellicoe, but a proposal that the warships of the US Navy should be integrated into a common command with the British was denounced by chief of naval operations Admiral William Shepherd Benson and secretary of the navy Josephus Daniels. Still, the implementation of the convoy



Admiral William Sims, centre, greets General John J 'Black Jack' Pershing, left, upon his arrival at Liverpool in June 1917

system contributed substantially to the final Allied victory in World War I.

A month after the war ended in November 1918, Sims was promoted to the temporary rank of admiral. Soon enough, he was recalled to the US and assumed his previous post as president of the Naval War College. With that, he reverted to his permanent rank of rear admiral. During his post-war years, he authored *The Victory at Sea*, a chronicle of his experiences in World War I, winning a Pulitzer Prize in 1921. Around the same time, he was engaged in a hot debate with Secretary Daniels as well as others as assessments of the American naval experience in the Great War were completed.

Sims argued that the Department of the Navy, including Secretary Daniels and Assistant Secretary Franklin D Roosevelt, had failed to supply the necessary resources to bring the war to a more rapid and economical conclusion

in terms of men and material expended. He asserted that slowness to act had resulted in the loss of 2.5 million tons of precious supplies to enemy action and prolonged the war by six months. He further stated that half a million lives had been lost unnecessarily in the process. Daniels responded vigorously that Sims' love of all things British had clouded his judgment and that his position in Britain had placed him at a disadvantage in comprehending the scope of American logistical challenges during the war. The controversy brought no lasting harm to the reputation of either party.

Sims retired from the Navy in 1922 but remained a public figure. He was an early advocate for air power and appeared on the cover of *Time* in October 1925. In 1930, he was promoted to full admiral on the Navy's retired list. A towering figure among the architects of the modern US Navy, he died in Boston at the age of 77 on 25 September 1936.



TO PRUSSIANISE THE NAVY

When Admiral Sims criticised the conduct of the navy establishment during the Great War, Secretary Josephus Daniels fired back

After Admiral William Sims openly questioned the conduct of the US Navy's administration in World War I, a Naval Investigative Committee was formed to look into the charges. Much of Sims' criticism was directed at the secretary of the Navy, Josephus Daniels, and Assistant Secretary Franklin D Roosevelt. The former was a skilled politician, and though he was less familiar with the 'real' Navy than Sims, he decided to unleash his own retaliatory broadside.

Testifying before the committee in the spring of 1920, Daniels stated bluntly that Sims' real motivation was to "Prussianise" the United States' Navy. The remark was particularly stinging in the wake of World War I, in which the German Empire, which included Prussia, had been the principal foe of the Allies. Daniels elaborated, stating: "Deeper than egotism and prejudice you will find a deep-seated determination to organise the Navy Department upon the approved Prussian plan by giving all power to the military and taking all away from the civilian."

Daniels added that Sims and some of the other officers wanted to make any civilian serving as Secretary of the Navy a mere "rubber stamp" for their "Prussian"-style administration. The rift that had opened within the Department of the Navy remained for some time.



Secretary of the Navy Josephus Daniels vigorously defended his position against accusations from Admiral William Sims after World War I



After attending a ceremony in September 1917, Admiral William Sims prepares to enter his car



*Theodore Roosevelt (centre)
poses with the Rough Riders
in Cuba, 1898*



THEODORE ROOSEVELT

THE ROUGH RIDER

The president that advocated 'big stick' diplomacy rose to national fame as the hero of the Battle of San Juan Heights

YEARS ACTIVE: 1898
CONFLICTS: SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR
RANK: COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, COLONEL

The inky black sky over Havana Harbour erupted with fire when the US battleship Maine blew up at 9.40pm on 15 February 1898.

The explosion ripped out the anchored vessel's bottom, sinking it and killing 266 sailors on board – almost two-thirds of the crew. In the morning, only the twisted wreckage of the colossal warship's mast and bow could be seen poking out of the water. All across the Cuban capital, shattered windowpanes blown out by the blast sparkled in the Caribbean sunlight. But the shockwaves stretched far beyond Havana. Within four months, America would not only have blamed Spain for sinking the Maine, but defeated them in "a splendid little war", which left the Spanish Empire devastated, the United States ascendant, and Theodore Roosevelt on the path to becoming the 26th president.

Today we know the sinking of the Maine was by a fire in the battleship's coal bunker igniting the nearby gunpowder magazines. However, at the time, the United States was quick to blame Spain. While not playing an active role in the Cuban independence movement, the US Navy vessel had been sent to Havana in symbolic

solidarity with the nationalist guerrillas fighting for freedom from Spanish rule. It was said the Maine was even flying a Cuban flag when it was destroyed. "Spanish Treachery," declared William Randolph Hearst's *New York Journal* the day after the attack. Other newspapers followed suit, helping to promote the battle cry: "Remember the Maine. To Hell with Spain!"

The US Navy believed a submarine mine had destroyed the ship, but wouldn't couldn't determine who was responsible. However, this did not stop Theodore Roosevelt, assistant secretary of the Navy, from joining hawkish Democrat senators in condemning President McKinley's attempts to cool the burgeoning diplomatic crisis. However, in a move that is as shocking today as it was then, when the US went to war with Spain in April 1898, Roosevelt resigned his post to go off and fight.

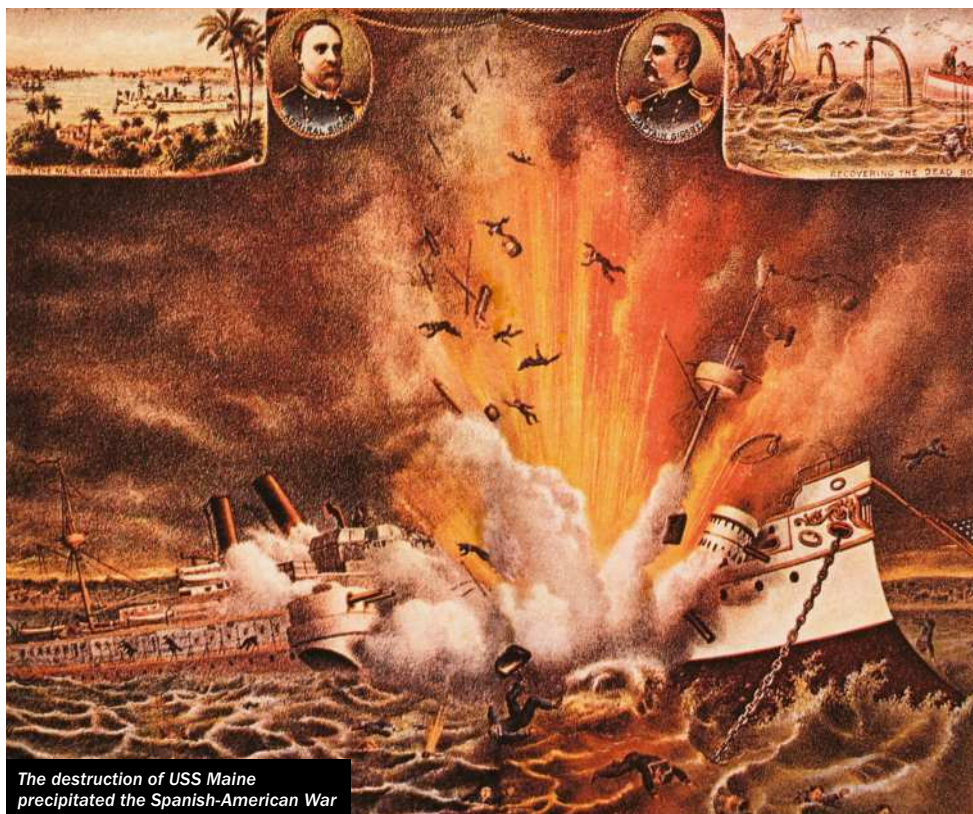
To round out the understaffed United States Army, the government called upon 125,000 men to volunteer and fill out the rank. Roosevelt was eager to oblige and with his friend Leonard

Woods, who had been the White House physician, formed the First Voluntary Cavalry regiment. An eccentric mix of Western cowboys and East Coast blue bloods, the quickly garnered media attention who labelled them 'the Rough Riders'.

After less than a month's formal training in San Antonio, Texas, the Rough Riders set sail for the war. However, once again the effects of the United States' rush to war were felt: there weren't enough transport ships in Tampa, Florida, to carry all the troops to Cuba. Only 550 Rough Riders – around half of those recruited – were able to make the journey, while the majority of the cavalry unit was forced to leave their horses behind, meaning they would have to fight on foot.

The battle raged for more than two hours. The shrieks, groans and deafening din of warfare seemed to ricochet off the trees. The smoke from the Americans' old-fashioned guns seared the men's eyes and choked them with every breath they took. In stark contrast,

"AFTER LESS THAN A MONTH'S FORMAL TRAINING IN SAN ANTONIO, TEXAS, THE ROUGH RIDERS SET SAIL FOR WAR"



The destruction of USS Maine precipitated the Spanish-American War



A young Roosevelt poses in buckskin and carries a carved hunting knife from Tiffany during his 'wilderness' years

the Spaniards' superior 1893 model Mausers fired off round after round from smokeless cartridges, making it near impossible to pinpoint their location.

As they made their way towards the Spanish entrenchment at Las Guásimas, Roosevelt couldn't see where most of his men were positioned nor the enemy. His first instinct was to charge, but each trooper had to remain aware of the men on both sides of him to keep his bearings in the thicket.

The Spanish Mauser bullets continued to rain down upon them; several Rough Riders fell down dead. Roosevelt began to worry that he would be court-martialled for his actions. After all, this was a battle he was not strictly speaking supposed to be fighting.

The Rough Riders had landed at Daiquiri, on the southwest coast of Cuba, two days earlier, on 22 June. They had been attached to 16,000-strong V Corps, who were tasked with capturing Santiago de Cuba, the island's second largest city, where Spanish general Arsenio Linares y Pombo commanded more than 13,500 troops and a naval squadron lay at anchor in the harbour. However, to do it they would have to make their way through miles of dense jungle and up the well-defended hills that ringed the city.

The commander of V Corps, General Major William Shafter, had yet to come ashore. In his absence, Major General Joseph Wheeler, the head of the Cavalry Division, was the highest-ranking officer. 'Fighting Joe' Wheeler was a

veteran of the American Civil War, in which he served as a general for the Confederate Army. Receiving intelligence that Spanish forces lurked amongst the trees at Las Guásimas, Wheeler – eager for the glory of fighting the Spanish-American War's first battle – decided to attack.

The move was protested by Major General Henry Lawton, who had been given a direct order by Shafter to cover the landings at Daiquiri by advancing further up the coast on Siboney. Wheeler changed that order, so Lawton would have to support his ambush further inland. Fighting Joe had less trouble convincing his own cavalry brigadier general Samuel Baldwin Marks Young or the Rough Riders' Leonard Woods.

They set off at daybreak the next morning. The plan was to encircle the Spaniards, with Wheeler instructing Young to cross a valley and hit the Spanish entrenchments first with just under 500 men. As Young and his troops pushed closer towards a mountain ridge, Wood and Roosevelt were to strike the Spaniards on the western flank with their 500 or so



FORGOTTEN HEROES

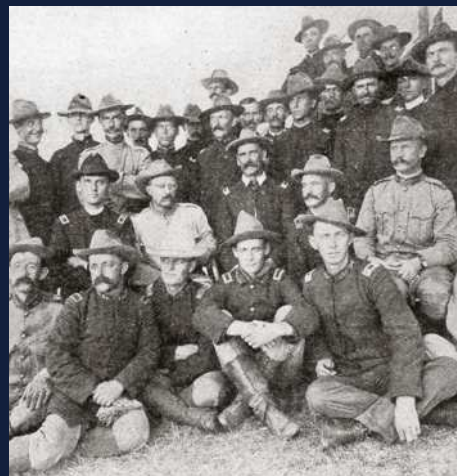
While the focus is often placed on Roosevelt, the rest of the Rough Riders are often overlooked

While Roosevelt had no military experience when he formed the First Volunteer Cavalry, Leonard Wood was already a distinguished soldier. After qualifying as a doctor at Harvard, he enlisted as an army surgeon and won a Medal of Honor fighting the Apaches in Arizona in 1866. After the Spanish-American War, he was appointed military governor of Cuba, and later governor-general of the Philippines.

In Roosevelt's own words, the Rough Riders had "no better or braver man" than Bill McGinty. This Oklahoman cowboy fought alongside Roosevelt at Las Guásimas and San Juan Heights, but what really distinguished him was that he went out of his way to distribute food and water to hungry cavalymen

as they worked their way up Kettle Hill, ignoring a hail of bullets to reach their trench. After the war, McGinty toured the world as part of Buffalo Bill's Wild West Show, riding bucking broncos and re-enacting the Battle of San Juan Heights.

Jesse Langdon was just 16 years old when he joined the Rough Riders. When the war broke out, he rode the rails from Dakota Territory to Washington, DC. He called on Roosevelt at the Navy Department, reminding him that his father had treated Roosevelt's cattle during his ranching days. Roosevelt paid for him to be sent to San Antonio to enlist. He was the last surviving member of the regiment, dying on 29 June 1974 at the age of 94.



Roosevelt with the officers of the Rough Riders, 1898

Rough Riders. However, Wheeler's traditional linear tactics did not work here. The Spanish troops had learned the art of cover and concealment from their struggle with the Cuban revolutionaries. The Americans were also not used to the dense terrain, which meant they couldn't press the two-pronged attack in an organised manner.

Young engaged the Spanish at 7.20am, letting rip with a Hotchkiss revolving cannon though he couldn't see who was shooting at. The Spanish forces had barricaded themselves behind felled trees, while sharp shooters also hid in the long grass on a nearby verge, as well as hand-dug trenches near the barricades. The Rough Riders were a little behind when they heard the roar of gunfire. As they tried to step up their advance, a fusillade ripped through the trees. The snipers had been arranged so they targeted the Riders' western approach. While Young engaged the Spanish as planned, taking

was furious with Wheeler's insubordination and careful not to give the general free reign again – not when there was much worse to come.

With V Corps now ashore, it pressed on to Santiago. The Americans' main advantage was numbers. While Linares had over 36,000 troops across the Oriente Province, they were scattered in small garrisons across the countryside, fighting off Cuban rebels. Linares was also keen to maintain his 10,000 men in reserve at Santiago, expecting V Corps' attacks from the east to be a feint for a naval attack on the city. This meant San Juan Heights, made up of San Juan Hill and Kettle Hill that ringed Santiago, were only defended by 800 men. Shafter's forces were 20 times that size. However, the Spanish defenders controlled the high ground. While a blockhouse on the crest of the San Juan Hill provided a stronghold, the soldiers had dug deep trenches and littered the hillside with barbed wire.

“WHILE LINARES HAD OVER 36,000 TROOPS ACROSS THE ORIENTE PROVINCE, THEY WERE SCATTERED IN SMALL GARRISONS”

heavy losses, one by one the Riders crumbled in agony beneath an endless volley.

It was only when Lawton sent reinforcements that the scales were tipped. The Americans were still thoroughly bloodied; 16 were killed – including eight Rough Riders – and 52 wounded. In contrast, the Spaniards lost 12 dead and only 24 wounded. Wheeler considered the Battle of Las Guásimas a qualified success because they Spanish forces had retreated, but this was only because Linares had already sent word to them to pull back to Santiago. Shafter



Roosevelt at Las Guásimas in Harper's Pictorial History of the War with Spain

In the same way that Linares' sneaking suspicions had limited his tactical manoeuvring, so did Shafter's. Whether it was due to poor intelligence or bad judgement, Shafter was convinced that the former would call in reinforcements if V Corps marched on San Juan Heights.

Shafter suspected that these Spanish troops would come from the El Caney fortress, 6.5 kilometres north of Santiago, from which angle they could attack his right flanks. To prevent this, on the day of the Battle of the San Juan Heights, he sent Major General Lawton and the 6,653 troops of the Second Infantry Division to capture the garrison. Lawton struck early in the morning and expected to accomplish the task swiftly. Instead 520 well-armed defenders held El Caney until the later afternoon.



The twisted wreckage of USS Maine was recovered from Havana Harbour in 1912, before formally sunk further out at sea



THE MAKING OF TR

Roosevelt had to embrace “the strenuous life”

In the public imagination, Theodore Roosevelt is remembered as a rugged cowboy. It's hard not to picture him dressed in a wide-brimmed hat, firing off his carbine as he charges on horseback. The truth is that Roosevelt was actually an East Coast aristocrat, born in New York City on 27 October 1858. His father, Theodore Senior, was the scion of a well-to-do Knickerbocker family, and ran a successful plate-glass import business that allowed young Theodore to grow up in a life of luxury.

Also contrary to how we remember him today, the young Roosevelt suffered from illness and asthma as well as the myopic eyesight that plagued him his whole life. He spent a lot of time secluded indoors, even being homeschooled. However, in his early teens he endeavoured to do something about this, training with ex-prizefighter John Long to develop a robust physique. After a few months of weight-lifting and sparring, Long entered Roosevelt into a tournament in the lightweight division and to everyone's surprise, he won. Thus began a passion for what Roosevelt later termed “the strenuous life”.

As well as embracing boxing and other martial arts such as jiu-jitsu, judo and wrestling, a 24-year-old Roosevelt left New York to work as cattle rancher in the Dakota Territory. He learned to ride western style, rope cattle and hunt bison on the banks of the Little Missouri, while writing magazine articles and eventually books on ranching life.



Roosevelt's wilderness years had provided good training for when it came to leading the charge at San Juan Heights



WILDERNESS WARRIOR

Roosevelt did more than any president to protect America's great outdoors

A keen outdoorsman with a lifelong interest in natural history, it's perhaps no surprise that one of Roosevelt's greatest legacies was conserving America's environment. Before he was even in office, he fought to protect Yellowstone. While it had been made a national park by Ulysses S Grant as early as 1872, the designation did not exempt it from commercial exploitation. When mining and railroad interests threatened to seriously damage Yellowstone, Roosevelt went on the warpath. Along with his friends at the Boone and Crockett Club, he penned editorials, spoke publicly and lobbied Washington's rich and powerful until a bill protecting the park was passed in 1894.

Once president himself, Roosevelt went even further. At his urging, Congress created the Forest Service in 1905, to manage government-owned forest reserves across the country. They did so on the condition that the president also signed a bill that limited his ability to set aside Western forestland for preservation. Roosevelt responded with characteristic panache; before approving the bill, he signed 16 million additional acres of into federal protection.

Unable to rely on Congress, Roosevelt used his own executive authority to railroad through additional environmental protections during his presidency. From the Tongass National Forest in Alaska to the Hawaiian Islands Bird Reservation, he made 18 national monuments, scores of bird reservations, four game preserves, 24 reclamation projects and 150 national forests across the United States. This amounted to 194 million acres off limits to the lumber mills, mineral corporations and waterpower – five times as much land as of his predecessors combined.



Roosevelt with naturalist John Muir at Glacier Point, Yosemite Valley, California, in 1903

While the early morning fighting raged at El Caney, the assault on the Heights began. The main thrust was made up of 8,000 troops, including a 4,300-man cavalry. While Shafter dispatched commands from the rear, Brigadier General Jacob Kent led the First Infantry Division. Wheeler contracted a tropical fever, so Major General Samuel Storrow Sumner assumed command of the Cavalry Division. As a result, Leonard Wood was promoted to brigadier general of the Second Brigade, which



Roosevelt storms San Juan Heights

“HOWEVER, THE GALLANTRY OF ROOSEVELT AND HIS MEN AT SAN JUAN MADE THEM NATIONAL HEROES”

meant Roosevelt was in sole charge of the Rough Riders for this crucial battle.

The journey to the front was only three kilometres, but it was a hard slog through jungle along a narrow trail. As planned, Kent's division broke off to the left to tackle San Juan Hill, while the cavalry headed right towards Kettle Hill. However, as they each emerged from the cover of the jungle, they immediately started taking casualties.

A horrified Roosevelt watched as one of his men, Bucky O'Neill, fell dead, shot through the heart. The cavalry managed to cross the San Juan River and reach the foot of the Kettle Hill but their position was untenable – there was no cover and the fire from the Spanish Mauser was still heavy. One of the few cavalrymen to actually be mounted, Roosevelt rode up and down the line on his horse, Texas, shouting encouragement. However, he had no authority to order an attack up the hill. Four messengers were sent to Wood before a response came.

Lawton's Second Division had failed to appear as expected, several officers were wounded, and with no word from Shafter, confusion reigned. At the base of St. Juan, sheltering from shells and bullet in a captured trench, several low-ranking officers took action. Around 1pm, the two divisions charged their respective hills simultaneously. Roosevelt's troopers moved forward, scrambling up the rough terrain and cheering. Roosevelt, still on horseback, rode ahead until he hit a barbed wire fence and was forced to proceed on foot. Although defending fire and oppressive heat slowed their advance – causing the Rough



Roosevelt's "strong executive" approach to the presidency did not win him universal praise

Riders and Buffalo Soldiers to become mingled and bunched up – the Americans pushed forward, reached the trenches on the crest and engaged Spanish soldiers in hand-to-hand fighting. The surviving defenders realised they were outnumbered ten to one, so broke and fled towards Santiago.

However, the battle was not over yet. From the crest of Kettle Hill, Roosevelt could see that Kent's infantrymen had not yet reached the San Juan summit. Shouting orders to follow him, Roosevelt charged back down Kettle Hill to attack San Juan's western side in the hope that it would draw fire from Kent.

As Roosevelt – now leading both the Rough Riders and the rest of the cavalry that had



A political cartoon satirises Roosevelt's role as 'world policeman'

taken Kettle Hill – charged San Juan Hill, a noise ripped through the air, which Roosevelt recognised immediately. “It’s the Gatlings, men, our Gatlings!”

The battery of three multi-barrelled Gatling guns had taken its time to arrive, having to be floated down a river and dragged across uneven terrain, but it quickly made a difference. Firing off 18,000 rounds in just three and a half minutes from the base of San Juan Hill, several Spanish soldiers were observed abandoning their trenches in terror. Between this new threat and the appearance of Roosevelt’s cavalry on the western flank, San Juan Hill quickly fell.

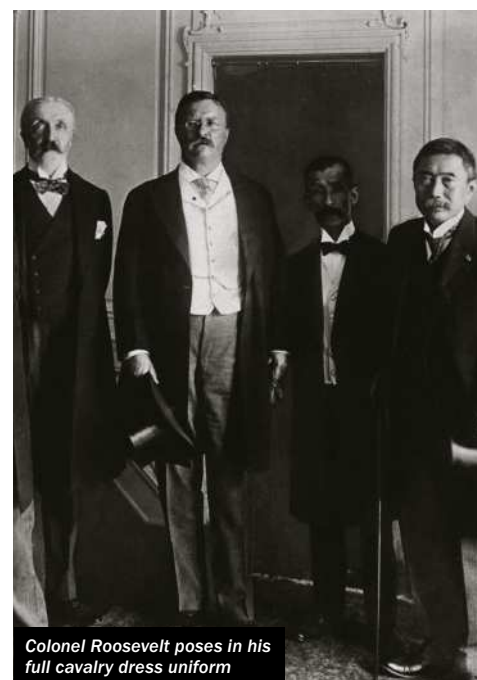
The capture of the Heights and the fight at El Caney account for 80 per cent of US casualties for the entire Spanish-American War. 225 Americans were killed in action, 1,384 wounded and 72 went missing. This included 89 Rough Riders killed or injured, the heaviest loss of any of the cavalry regiments. However, the Spanish also lost Santiago. Shafter besieged the city and within two days, the Spanish naval squadron based there bolted for the open seas, where they were annihilated by the superior US Navy flotilla. On 17 July, Santiago surrendered.

The role of the Rough Riders in winning the Spanish-American War is arguably negligible,

as it was a singularly unequal contest to begin with and much of the war was won by the Navy. However, the gallantry of Roosevelt and his men at San Juan made them national heroes. Seizing on his new-found fame, Republican bosses in New York were quick to tap Roosevelt to run for governor, which he did later in 1898. Within a year, he was selected as President McKinley’s running mate for re-election. While Republicans had planned for Roosevelt’s role was to be strictly ceremonial, when McKinley was assassinated in 1901, he was elevated to the presidency.

Though the unelected Roosevelt promised continuity with McKinley policies, he quickly transformed the office. While he pursued progressive policies, including a fairer deal for workers and environmental protections at home, it was on the international stage that Roosevelt really came into his own. Roosevelt understood that the Spanish-American War had redefined the United States’ role in the world. Embracing American imperialism, he bulked up the US Navy and created the ‘Great White Fleet’, sending it on a world tour as a testament to US military power. Advocating that the US should “speak softly and carry a big stick”, he saw the United States as a policeman for the Western hemisphere. This

led to the Venezuelan Affair of 1902 preventing Europe from directly interfering in Latin America affairs, as well as speeding up the completion of the Panama Canal by providing the Panama Revolution with funds and a naval blockade against Columbia. Roosevelt was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize in 1906 for his role in negotiating the end of the Russo-Japanese War. Just over a century after the Spanish-American War, in 2001 he became the first president to be given a Medal of Honor.



Colonel Roosevelt poses in his full cavalry dress uniform

“REPUBLICAN BOSSES IN NEW YORK WERE QUICK TO TAP ROOSEVELT TO RUN FOR GOVERNOR, WHICH HE DID LATER IN 1898”



A portrait of Pershing



JOHN J PERSHING

GENERAL OF THE ARMIES

Disciplinarian 'Black Jack' Pershing commanded American forces during World War I

YEARS ACTIVE: 1886-1924
CONFLICTS: INDIAN WARS, SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR, MEXICAN REVOLUTION, WWI
RANK: GENERAL OF THE ARMIES

For John Joseph Pershing, 1915 proved a year marked by tragedy. On the night of 26-27 August, a fire broke out at Pershing's home in San Francisco. He was at the time a brigadier general and had settled in the Californian city in 1914 when taking command of the 8th Brigade following service in the Philippines. Trouble along the Mexican border had seen Pershing and his Brigade ordered to El Paso. His wife and young family – three girls and a boy – had stayed in San Francisco, where Pershing presumed they would be safe. The fire, however, was devastating. His wife and his three daughters all suffocated amid the blaze. Only his son, Warren, survived. Pershing was utterly crushed.

The following year, Pershing was promoted to major general, but he found no solace in the appointment. "All the promotion in the world," he told a friend, "would make no difference now." And yet Pershing did his duty, throwing himself into his military endeavours. The year 1916 saw the Mexican warlord Francisco 'Pancho' Villa, frustrated by American support for his rival Venustiano Carranza, launch an attack on US territory, raiding the town of

Columbus, New Mexico. With 18 Americans killed in the raid, the government ordered a Punitive Expedition and Pershing was elected to the command.

By the time the Punitive Expedition withdrew from Mexico in early 1917, it had succeeded in reducing Villa's forces, earning Pershing the command of the US-Mexico border. This was Pershing's position in April 1917 when President Woodrow Wilson finally decided that America should enter the war in Europe. Contrary to Wilson's hopes, it had become apparent that the US could not push for a liberal world order while remaining detached from such a major conflict. The president had also discovered that Germany was willing to back Mexico, and Pancho Villa in particular, if America entered the war on the Allies' side.

Hence, on 2 April 1917 Wilson addressed the American people, telling them, "We shall fight for the things which we have always carried closest to our hearts." His intentions were noble, as were those of Britain and France in 1914, but while the great European powers had bought into those ideals with the spending of millions of lives, America had at this moment very little to offer militarily on a practical

level. The American standing army mustered only around 100,000 men and one-third of those were in the cavalry or coastal artillery. Pershing's campaign against Pancho Villa had marked the very limits of their capabilities.

Wilson, therefore, looked to conscription as the only viable option, though this had obvious, negative repercussions for those hoping for the rapid deployment of an American Expeditionary Force (AEF). First, the existing troops would be required to train the new recruits, acting as a cadre and adopting them into their units. Secondly, American arms production, which had been a vital cog in the Allies' war machine, would now need to turn inward and forge weapons and munitions for its own troops. The commander-in-chief of the German war effort, Erich Ludendorff, figured that America would not be able to launch an armed assault in Europe until 1919.

Still, America pressed ahead and Wilson had six major generals, the highest-ranking officers, at his disposal, though all but Leonard Wood and Pershing were either too ill or too old. The decision as to who would command the AEF fell in Pershing's favour. Here was a man, unlike Wood, who had proven himself physically fit



'BLACK JACK' AND THE BUFFALO SOLDIERS

Pershing earned his nickname following his service with the African-American troops of the 10th Cavalry

Pershing was transferred to the 10th Cavalry, a crack troop of African-American soldiers, in 1895 as a 35-year-old first lieutenant. He joined as the regiment was tasked with rounding up sections of the Cree population and deporting them to Canada. After arriving at Fort Assiniboine in October 1895, he was given command of the 10th Cavalry's Troop H, which had the awkward assignment of running down bands of Crees who had turned fugitive and were hightailing it across the plains toward Idaho and North Dakota. He commanded the troop with gusto, however, and treated his men with courtesy and respect.

His commitment to the 10th found full voice when they were assigned to active duties in Cuba following the outbreak of the Spanish-American War in 1898 and he lobbied incessantly to be allowed to fight with them in the campaign, even though the War Department had stated that no member of the Military Academy's faculty should be allowed to serve in the field. Yet Pershing got his way and his men served with distinction, especially during the feted charge up San Juan Hill where, upon their victory, the 10th planted their regimental flag. Such was the 10th's bravery, Pershing and his fellow officers argued for black troops to be granted commissions, a move that came to full fruition when the army was expanded during WWI.

When Pershing led the punitive expedition across the Mexican border in pursuit of Pancho Villa, he took the 10th Cavalry with him and later he wrote glowingly of "my service with a coloured regiment and how proud we were of its conduct in the Spanish-American War". 'Black Jack' Pershing was a name he carried with pride.



The 10th Cavalry, an African-American unit, served in with Pershing in Cuba during the Spanish-American War of 1898



Pershing inspects two ranks of the 2nd Battalion, an African American battalion in World War I. Known as 'Black Jack', Pershing always held these troops in high regard

and able to lead troops in the field. Pershing had shown himself to be a man of action with a wide range of military skills, though just how suited they would be to the manpower-sapping war of attrition that raged in Europe remained to be seen.

Upon his appointment, Pershing was 57 years old. He had been born in 1860 on a farm near Laclede, Missouri, his father having supported the Union army as a sutler during the Civil War. He entered the military academy at West Point in 1882, though he claimed that at the time he was more interested in the education on offer than any future military career. He emerged as a middling student, ranking 30th among his 77 peers though he demonstrated a penchant for leadership and was chosen first captain of cadets and president of his class. He graduated in the summer of 1886 and, after considering a petition to the army to allow him to delay active service while he studied for a law degree, in September of the same year he joined the 6th US Cavalry, commissioned as a second lieutenant, and was stationed at Fort Bayard in New Mexico. The 6th US Cavalry was conducting operations against Geronimo and the Chiricahua Apache and Pershing was later cited for bravery during these campaigns.

His early career as a cavalryman saw him operate from various posts along the frontier, in both New Mexico and South Dakota, and he played a role in the suppression of the final



General Pershing, the American Commander in Europe during WWI, arrives in France with the first American soldiers

uprisings of the Sioux. In 1890 Pershing served in the campaign to put down the Ghost Dance movement, an uprising among the Sioux in the Dakota Territory, and while his unit did not participate in the massacre at Wounded Knee, it did fight in its aftermath, in January 1891, when Sioux warriors attacked the 6th Cavalry's supply train.

As the year drew to a close he began a four-year stay at the University of Nebraska, Lincoln, becoming an instructor in military science while also earning the law degree after which he had hankered. He enjoyed such success with the university's drill team that the students voted to change their name to the Pershing Rifles, widely cited as the first of a whole host of such

"IN 1890 PERSHING SERVED IN THE CAMPAIGN TO PUT DOWN THE GHOST DANCE MOVEMENT, AN UPRISING AMONG THE SIOUX"

companies that operate today. After leaving Lincoln, Pershing returned to frontier service, where he was promoted to first lieutenant of the 10th Cavalry before entering West Point for a one-year stint as tactical officer in 1897.

It was here that he earned the nickname 'Black Jack', a derisory moniker foisted upon him by his cadets who objected to what they viewed as his excessive discipline. The name came from his having commanded black troops during his frontier campaigns, most notably with the 10th Cavalry. The name stuck, most likely with reference to a stern demeanour in the face of ill discipline.

After his year at West Point he returned to active service with the outbreak of the Spanish-American War in 1898, which erupted following the sinking of the warship USS Maine in Havana harbour, Cuba, in the February of that year. America supported the Cuban Revolt against the island's Spanish overlords and Pershing served with distinction through the Santiago campaign, which saw the American Army, including Pershing's 10th Cavalry, invade in a bid to capture Cuba's second-largest city.

The war witnessed Pershing's quick promotion, taking the role of ordnance officer with the rank of major of volunteers. In June 1899 he was made adjutant general, before overseeing the Bureau of Insular Affairs in the War Department. Under fire he was said by one observer to be 'as cool as a bowl of cracked ice'. As the war spread through the Pacific, Pershing was dispatched to the Philippines and the southern island of Mindanao in November 1899 as a young lieutenant. He was appointed captain in 1901 and conducted a campaign against the Moros, a fierce Muslim people who had fought ardently against Spanish rule and who now resisted the Americans.

While serving in the Philippines, Pershing set out to forge better relations with the Moros of the Maranao tribes. He successfully established friendly relations, a move that paid dividends with the captain being recognised

as an honorary local chieftain. He returned to the US in 1903 and there he met, courted and married Helen Frances Warren, daughter of the Wyoming senator Francis E Warren.

His honeymoon in 1905 was spent in Japan where he had been posted as military attaché to the American embassy, and during the Russo-Japanese War he spent several months as an observer with the Japanese army in Manchuria. In 1906, he received the biggest boost of his career to date, jumping from captain to brigadier general, pushing past 862 more senior officers. His father-in-law was chairman of the Senate Military Affairs Committee at the time, prompting cries of nepotism. In truth, all but one of the generals in the US Army had recommended Pershing's promotion, though Senator Warren most likely proved a valuable ally in getting the position confirmed through the Senate. Soon after Pershing returned to the Philippines and served as commander of the department of Mindanao and governor of Moro Province from 1909-1913.

During the American conflict with the Moros, police and soldiers were often assailed by juramentado, suicide swordsman on a personal jihad whose assault and ensuing martyrdom would ensure their place in heaven. In his memoirs, Pershing recorded that his men responded by burying each dead swordsman with a pig, an unclean animal, which would hamper the jihadist's passing into the gilded regions of the next life. Though some have questioned whether Pershing was ever involved in such actions, it was, he insisted in his memoirs, an unpleasant but effective antidote. He returned to America, to command the 8th Brigade and was posted to El Paso, his last major command before his appointment as commander of the American troops in Europe.



With a staff of 191 men and officers, Pershing set sail for Europe in May 1917, landing in France on 9 June 1917 and after organising his General Staff he wrote to the War Department recommending that it dispatch a force of "at least one million men by next May," and a force of three million by 1919. It was vital, said Pershing, that America retained the integrity of her own forces. Upon US entry in the war, the Allies had pushed for the dispersal of American troops into existing Allied lines to bolster their depleted numbers.

Pershing's vision won through and on 21 October, American soldiers entered front-line trenches for the very first time at a quiet area near Nancy. Each regiment of the 1st Division sent a battalion for a ten-day tour with a French division. During the night of 2-3 November the



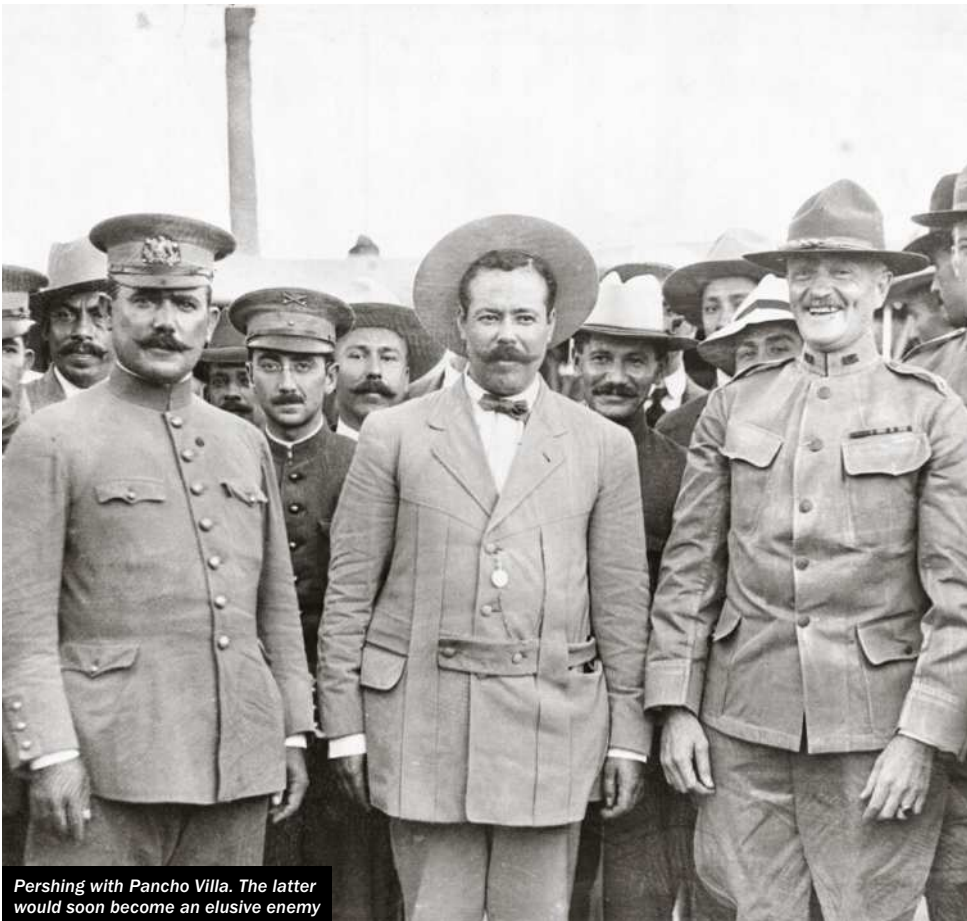
Captain Pershing in command during the advance on Fort Bacolod, Lanao District in the Philippines during the islands' fight for independence



Pershing in Mexico leading the Punitive Expedition against Pancho Villa following the bandit's attack on US soil



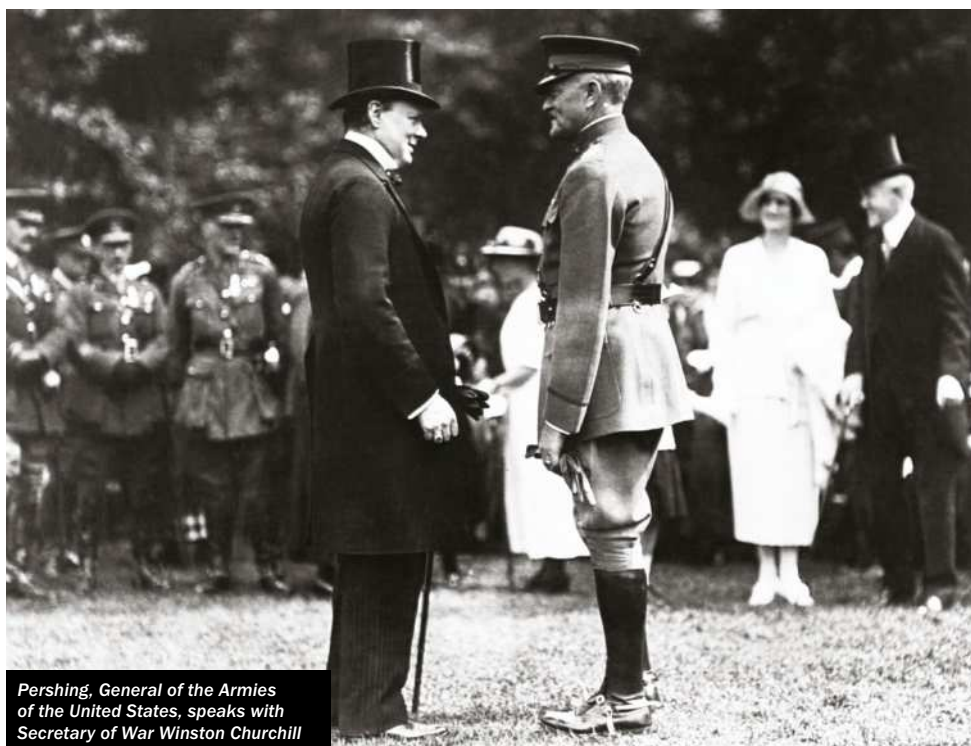
Pershing saluting on horseback while leading World War I veterans on parade in New York City. By 1919 he was appointed General of the Armies



Pershing with Pancho Villa. The latter would soon become an elusive enemy

AEF became involved in its first skirmish with a handful of lives lost. The AEF had, at this stage, four divisions stationed in France – the 1st, 2nd, 26th and 42nd – and though Pershing had requested one million men by May of the following year, he was told that the number would barely top half of that. The US also lacked the resources to supply them. Pershing remained undaunted.

By December 1917, the Allies were in difficulty. The Central Powers had signed an armistice with Russia, thus freeing up troops from their eastern front, while the British had suffered huge losses at both Ypres and Passchendaele and the French had not only endured failure at Nivelle but had also suffered mutinies during the spring. American reinforcements were urgently required, yet only 175,000 men had arrived in France and many were under-trained. In contrast, a far less well-resourced country like Canada had a full division in line within six months of its entry into the war, while during the Gallipoli campaign the ANZACs had placed two divisions in line in just two months. The French mockingly referred to the American forces as boy scouts. When an American accidentally ran over a Parisian with his car, the French claimed that the AEF was killing more Frenchmen than Germans.



Pershing, General of the Armies of the United States, speaks with Secretary of War Winston Churchill

“THE CENTRAL POWERS HAD SIGNED AN ARMISTICE WITH RUSSIA, THUS FREEING UP TROOPS FROM THEIR EASTERN FRONT”

Pershing was frustrated. By February 1918, America had been at war for ten months and yet only the 1st Division held a front, and that was one of the quietest. Pershing believed that when the mighty German Spring Offensive broke, the Americans would have to “stand by almost helpless” as they watched the Allies crumble. He feared the Allies would be hit by “the mightiest military offensive that the world had ever known,” and in the March of that year, Germany did indeed unleash a torrent of fire. On 21 March, the Germans rained down their heaviest artillery bombardment of the war,

thus far dispatching 71 divisions against the 26 British divisions holding the critical juncture of the Western Front, desperate to break the Allies before the American war machine finally lumbered into effective action. By 5 April, the British had suffered close to 170,000 casualties in just two weeks.

With the Allies stretched, Pershing offered to put all four of his divisions into the line, suggesting they form one corps, though the French commander-in-chief, Philippe Petain, disagreed, pointing out the Germans would most likely focus their attention on such a

battle-ravaged section of the line. Pershing, ever practical, acquiesced, and though it was not the move that he wanted, he placed all his resources at the disposal of French Marshal, Ferdinand Foch, who the allied powers promoted to the position of Supreme Commander of the Allied Armies.

The Allies survived the German spring offensive and during the summer launched their own counter moves. This allowed for the formation of an Allied reserve and American troops could at last, as Pershing had long hoped, form their own army in France rather than moving piecemeal to bolster weakened sections of the Allied lines. The American troops had already earned a morale boost courtesy of their action in June at Belleau Wood, when the 2nd Division deployed in the face of a French retreat from the Reims-Soissons front. The Americans fought valiantly and though they won nothing more than a densely packed wood and two small villages, the victory provided a psychological fillip.

Elsewhere, the 1st Division had prospered at Cantigny and the 3rd at Chateau-Thierry. Maybe Pershing's men could withstand the Germans? He resolved to withdraw his men from Allied tutelage with the AEF standing at around 800,000 men. By August, the AEF had dispensed with all its French instructors. In the same month, with Pershing confident in his numbers and in his men's resilience, the American First Army was formed.

For all Pershing's hopes, his army never became entirely self-sufficient, though it soon scored two larger victories and the repercussions of the second offensive reverberated around the world. First came the assault on the Saint-Mihiel salient. This was a huge triangle that cut into the Allied lines, slicing through the Paris-Nancy railway, and



THE HUNT FOR PANCHO VILLA

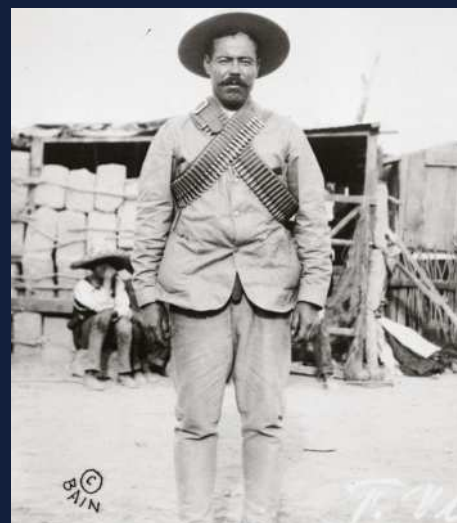
The Mexico campaign against Pancho Villa saw Pershing emerge as front-runner for command of the American forces in Europe

In October 1915, the US government officially recognised Venustiano Carranza as head of the government of Mexico, a move that greatly irked his rival Francisco 'Pancho' Villa. When the US facilitated the movement of more than 5,000 Mexican troops who won a victory over Villa at the Battle of Agua Prieta, Villa began to launch attacks against American citizens living in Northern Mexico. Emboldened – and perhaps encouraged by the German government that backed him – Villa then attacked the town of Columbus, in New Mexico, on 9 March 1916, killing ten American civilians and eight soldiers.

President Woodrow Wilson was furious and ordered a Punitive Expedition to enter Mexico and bring Villa to his knees. Pershing, a Brigadier General and the commander of Fort Bliss, Texas,

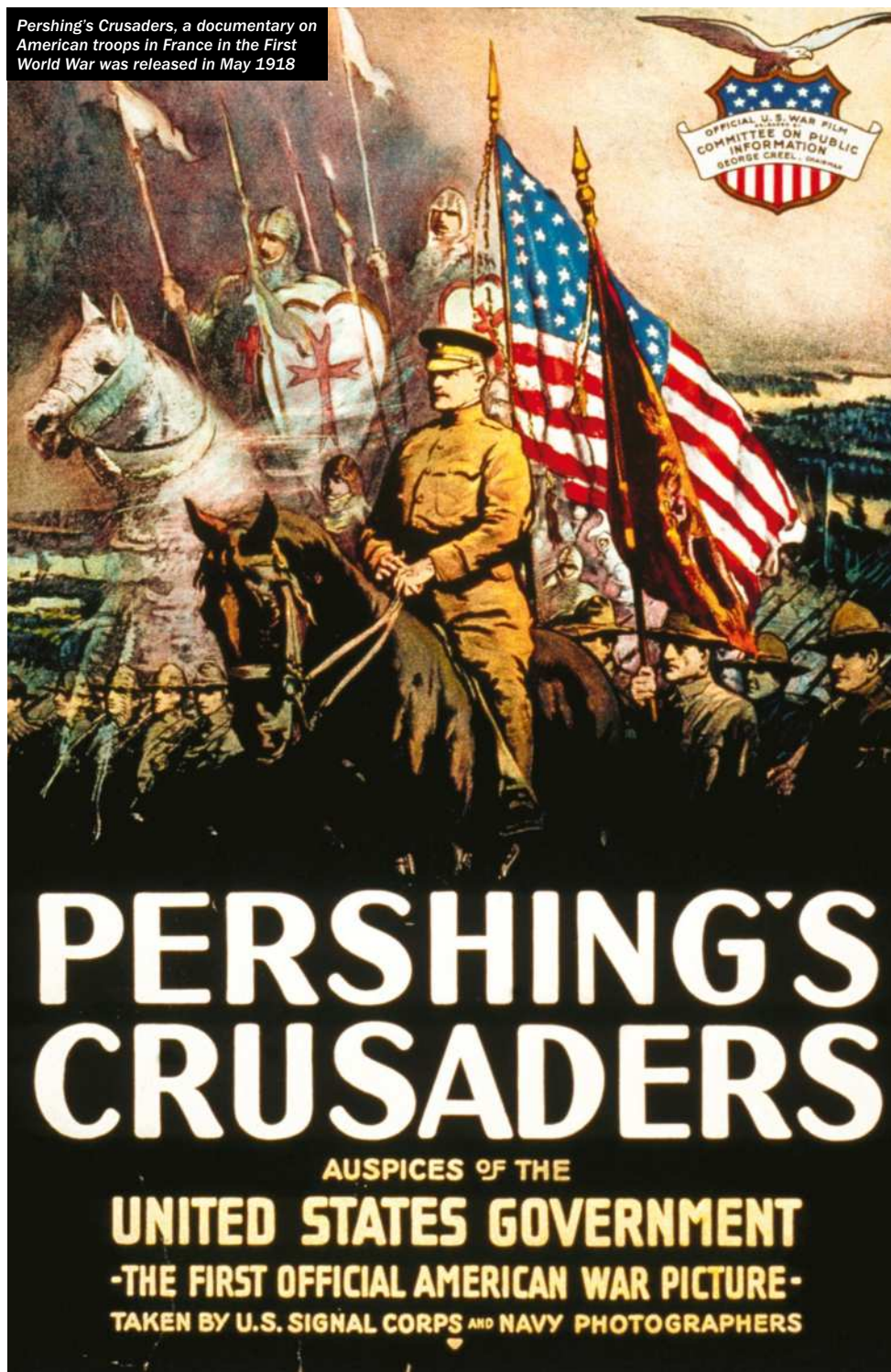
would lead the operation. One of his aides was George S Patton.

By 8 April, General Pershing had advanced more than 400 miles into Mexico with 6,675 men in the largest operation on foreign soil that the American Army had yet attempted. As the expedition progressed, tension between Mexico and America worsened, however, and US troops were soon fighting government men as well as Villa's. The bandit chief, meanwhile, eluded them. When Pershing withdrew in early February 1917, the Americans had failed in their primary objectives. Yet Pershing had enhanced his reputation as an organiser and leader, and soon found himself centre stage for the most important mission the American army had ever faced, deployment in Europe during WWI.



Pancho Villa launched the first foreign attack on American soil since the American War of Independence

Pershing's Crusaders, a documentary on American troops in France in the First World War was released in May 1918



Pershing had long had his eyes on an American assault, speaking to Petain about an attack during their first meeting in the previous year. The Allies were concerned about American naiveté in the face of a major battle and the British sought to cancel the attack. Foch, however, refused, though he too expressed concern about the Americans' inexperience.

The Saint-Mihiel salient was roughly 25 miles wide and 16 miles deep with a formidable set of defensive works, and the Allies and the Americans committed around two-thirds of a million men, 550,000 Americans and 110,000 French. Most of the ordinance was French. At 1am on 12 September, the American-led assault began and it began well. Pershing had wisely sent the more experienced 1st, 2nd and 42nd Divisions into the more dangerous open spaces to the south, and letting the less experienced divisions move through the sheltered woodland. George S Patton, later to become a titan of American military history, commanded French-made Renault tanks. The operation proved a great success, reducing the salient, reclaiming 200 square miles of territory, and freeing the Paris-Nancy railway. It saw the American First Army, its men and its officers, finally gain their spurs. The stage was now set for Pershing to make real headway.

That contribution came with the Meuse-Argonne Offensive launched on 26 September. The Meuse-Argonne sector was considered one of the most strategically important areas on the whole Western Front and it was a triumph for Pershing that the First Army was chosen to attack Sedan. If successful, this would cut the German railroad network and fatally constrict their position in the occupied territories. The First Army attacked west of the Meuse River, with the dense Argonne Forest hampering their progress. More than a million American troops took part and though suffering heavy casualties they had by the 11th day of the offensive outflanked the enemy, forcing them to retreat.

By 31 October the American forces had advanced ten miles, the French 20 miles, and the Argonne had been cleared of German

TIMELINE

- ★

● **John J Pershing is born**
Born on a farm near Laclede, Missouri, to businessman John Fletcher Pershing and homemaker Ann Elizabeth Thompson. He graduates from State Normal School (now Truman State University) in 1880 with a BSc in scientific didactics.
September 1860
- ★

● **Joins the 6th Cavalry**
After graduating from West Point in the summer of 1886, Pershing joins Troop L of the 10th Cavalry, reporting for active duty in the September. He serves in California, Arizona, and North Dakota.
July 1886
- ★

● **Ghost Dance Campaign**
The 6th cavalry are involved in the suppression of the Sioux uprisings of the Ghost Dance movement though Pershing's unit does not participate in the massacre at Wounded Knee.
December 1890
- ★

● **Promoted to first lieutenant**
Joins the 10th Cavalry, a unit with which he would fight with distinction in several theatres of war. His command of these crack African-American soldiers earns him the moniker 'Black Jack'.
October 1892
- ★

● **Battle of San Juan Hill**
Fights with the 10th Cavalry during this key offensive in Cuba during the Spanish-American War, fighting alongside the famed Rough Riders and their commander, future president Theodore Roosevelt.
July 1898
- ★

● **Marriage to Helen Frances Warren**
He marries Helen Frances Warren, daughter of the Wyoming senator Francis E. Warren and honeymoon in Japan, where he is posted on military service.
January 1905

troops. On 10 November the Allies finally reached Sedan and cut the rail line. This was a momentous achievement and Germany sued for peace. The Armistice was declared on 11 November and Pershing had his great victory. America had proved her value in the war for Europe. 'Black Jack' was a hero.

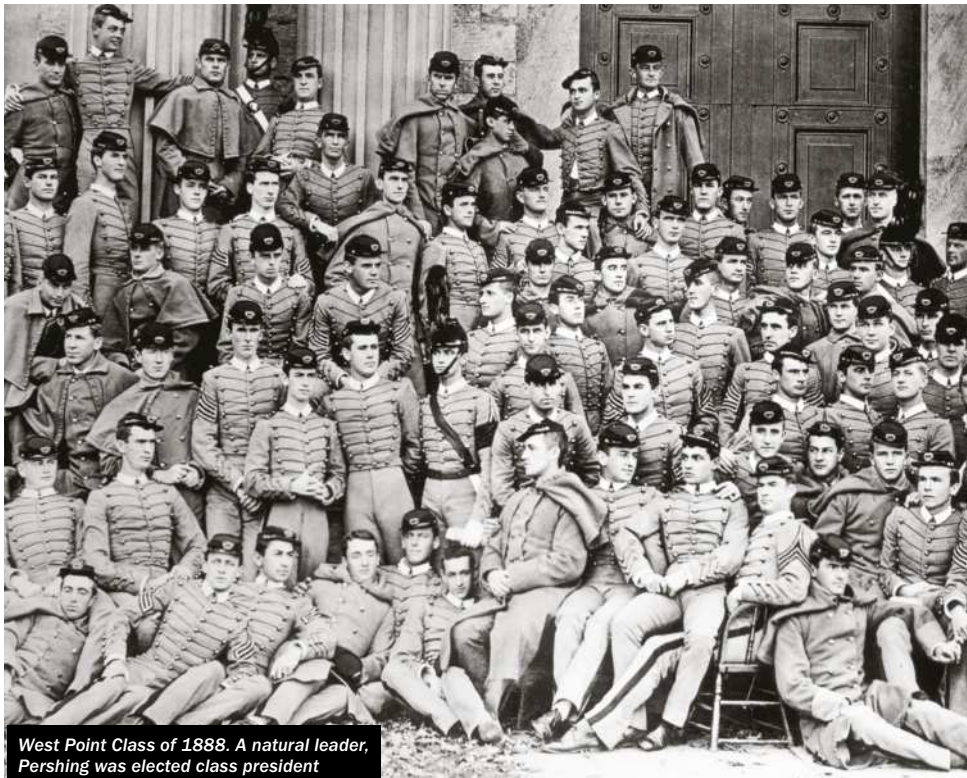
Moving through the peace, many expected Pershing as the hero of the American war in France to run for the presidency. This was the norm, and yet Pershing always maintained that he had no great appetite for political authority. When the Republicans came back into power

in 1921, plans were afoot to create a new role for this great American though, much to his pleasure, Pershing was instead appointed Chief of Staff, an office he held through to his retirement in 1924.

In his private life it was widely believed that following the tragic death of his wife, he would marry Anne Patton, sister of his aide in 1917, George S Patton, to whom he was engaged upon his departure for Europe. During his time in France, however, their relationship dwindled, while his friendship with Micheline Resco, a French-naturalised Romanian, blossomed.

The two never married, but their relationship remained intact, surviving long periods apart up until his death.

In 1932, Pershing had returned to the public eye with publication of his memoirs, *My Experiences in the World War*, which were awarded the Pulitzer Prize for history. Following the outbreak of the Second World War, he advocated American aid for Britain from the very outset. Upon his death in 1948 at the ripe age of 87, America mourned the passing of a great disciplinarian, a man of untold determination and conviction. Pershing stands as the only man in US history to hold the rank of General of the Armies while serving on active duty, a fitting legacy for a great soldier and a true American hero.



West Point Class of 1888. A natural leader, Pershing was elected class president



Pershing with his wife and children. Sadly, his wife and his three girls would all perish in a fire

● Leads Mexican Punitive Expedition

Shortly after the tragic death of his wife and daughters, Pershing is asked to lead the offensive against Pancho Villa, which runs through 1916-1917, and he is promoted to major general during the campaign. Though the campaign does not succeed in bringing Villa to justice for his attack on the town of Columbus, it does drastically reduce his forces and his threat. Pershing learns a great deal about campaign logistics, and his dedication to his command sees him emerge as the front-runner when President Wilson begins the search for his commander-in-chief of the American forces to be deployed alongside the allies in France during WWI.

March 1916



● Attack on Saint-Mihiel salient

More than half a million Americans lead this engagement, which proves a great success. American soldiers and officers are now regarded in a new light by the Allied leadership.

September 1918

● Appointed General of the Armies

Advances to the highest rank, even though he only ever wears four stars as a general in the field. He remains to this day the only man to hold the rank while still serving on active duty.

September 1919

● Promotion to brigadier general

His marriage is soon followed by his rapid promotion from the rank of captain to brigadier general, a move that sees him leapfrog 862 more senior officers. His father-in-law is chairman of the Senate Military Affairs Committee, inviting allegations of nepotism, though, in truth, all but one of the generals in the US Army vote for his promotion. Senator Warren, however, likely proves a valuable ally in getting the position confirmed through the Senate. Pershing returns to the Philippines to serve as commander of the department of Mindanao and governor of Moro Province from 1909-1913.

September 1906

● Sets sail for Europe

Pershing is appointed head of the American Expeditionary Force and sets sail for Europe, landing in June in Liverpool before transferring to France. He argues for the integrity of a standalone American army but, when seeing the pressure on the Allies, places his forces at their disposal until the tide begins to turn. By this time, the First Army is formed, and is better trained, going on to prove its mettle in a number of minor engagements before making two sizeable contributions on the battlefields of France.

May 1917

● Capture of Sedan

The Americans' pivotal contribution to the Meuse-Argonne Offensive cuts the German supply network and prompts them to sue for peace – a great victory for Pershing and the First Army.

November 1918

● Named Chief of Staff

His last great appointment in a distinguished career sees him establish the War Plans Board and push for a strong Army, thorough officer schooling, and a well-regulated militia.

July 1921



General of the Army Douglas MacArthur at the height of his powers, posing with his trademark corn-cob pipe clenched between his teeth



DOUGLAS MACARTHUR

TRIAL AND TRIUMPH

General of the Army Douglas MacArthur won lasting fame during World War II in the Pacific and found controversy later in his military career

YEARS ACTIVE: 1903-1964
CONFLICTS: WWI, WWII, KOREAN WAR
RANK: GENERAL OF THE ARMY

The whaleboat filled with dignitaries lurched forwards in the pounding surf and stuck fast on a sandbar in knee-deep water. Undeterred, the tall figure of an American officer exited along with his entourage, wading ashore on the island of Leyte in the Philippines.

On 20 October 1944, General Douglas MacArthur made good on the promise he delivered in the dark early days of World War II in the Pacific. Evacuated from the embattled islands and spirited to safety in Australia in 1942, MacArthur had vowed to return to the Philippines and defeat the forces of Imperial Japan. Shortly after reaching the shoreline, MacArthur stepped up to a portable radio and intoned, "People of the Philippines, I have returned. By the grace of Almighty God, our forces stand again on Philippine soil – soil consecrated in the blood of our two peoples... Rally to me!"

For MacArthur, commander of Allied forces in the Southwest Pacific, it was a moment of supreme vindication. His reputation as a flamboyant, egotistical commander was never clearer, and it remains difficult to determine

whether the moment was made for MacArthur, or MacArthur for just such a moment.

Regardless, the return to the Philippines was the crowning achievement for Douglas MacArthur, a veteran of more than 40 years of military service. Born into a military family, the son of Army Captain Arthur MacArthur and Mary Pinkney Hardy MacArthur, at Little Rock Barracks in Arkansas on 26 January 1880, he spent his childhood as a "military brat". The youngest of three sons, Douglas later wrote that he had "learned to ride and shoot even before I could read and write – indeed, almost before I could walk and talk".

The family lived on military installations across the American west, and when the MacArthurs moved to San Antonio, Texas, Douglas excelled, both academically and athletically, at the West Texas Military Academy. He earned an appointment to the US Military Academy at West Point, New York, and endured merciless hazing. His mother took up residence at a hotel on the academy grounds, no doubt sparking some of the derisive treatment. Despite that, however, he graduated at the top of his class in 1903 and embarked on an illustrious and controversial career.

Shortly after graduation, MacArthur was posted to the 3rd Engineer Battalion and visited the Philippines for the first time. His travels in the Far East also took him to Japan, China and India. Returning to the United States in 1906, he was posted to various locations across the country and received steady promotions. When the army was ordered to occupy Veracruz, Mexico, in the spring of 1914, MacArthur displayed personal courage and leadership, fighting off several attacks along a railroad line. He was recommended for the Medal of Honor.

After the US entered World War I in April 1917, Colonel MacArthur went to France as chief of staff of the 42nd Infantry Division. Despite his elevated staff position, he was often in the thick of the fighting, leading troops against the Germans. He was again recommended for the Medal of Honor and actually received an astonishing two Distinguished Service Crosses, seven Silver Stars and the French Croix de Guerre. He was wounded twice, promoted to brigadier general, and participated in raids on enemy trenches during the Champagne-Marne Offensive. During the Battle of Saint-Mihiel and the Meuse-Argonne Offensive, MacArthur performed a



MACARTHUR ESCAPES THE PHILIPPINES

PT-boats and aircraft transported Douglas MacArthur from the Philippines to Australia, where he led resurgent Allied forces against the Japanese

As the situation in the Philippines deteriorated in the face of overwhelming Japanese military pressure, President Franklin D Roosevelt ordered General Douglas MacArthur, his family and members of his staff to evacuate from the island of Corregidor. MacArthur was disturbed at leaving his embattled troops to a terrible fate, but he understood that if such a high-ranking officer as himself fell into enemy hands, the propaganda coup would be damaging, while the blow to Allied morale would be enormous.

On the evening of 11 March 1942, the general and his entourage boarded small, fast PT-boats in Manila Bay for the first harrowing leg of their journey to Australia. The commander of the US Navy contingent charged with making safe passage across 560 miles of enemy-dominated waters to the Philippine island of Mindanao was Lieutenant John D Bulkeley, a daring officer who helped the passengers aboard PT-41 and other boats, heavily armed but just 77 feet long and made mostly of wood. During the next 35 hours, the flotilla sped toward Mindanao, evading Japanese warships, aircraft and mines while careering through rough seas. When the PTs reached their destination, MacArthur told Bulkeley, "You've taken me out of the jaws of death, and I won't forget it."

On 17 March, MacArthur and others boarded a Boeing B-17 Flying Fortress bomber for northern Australia. From there, they took another plane and then a lengthy rail trip to Melbourne, where the general set to work beginning the long, costly trek back to the Philippines and victory in World War II.



PT-32 was one of four fast, manoeuvrable torpedo boats that spirited General Douglas MacArthur and others to safety in the Philippines

reconnaissance of enemy positions and was recommended for promotion to major general as a result.

Between the world wars, MacArthur's star was on the rise in the peacetime military. In 1919, he returned to West Point, serving as superintendent for three years. MacArthur formalised the famous cadet honour code, modernised the curriculum and introduced relevant training by regular army personnel.



General John J 'Black Jack' Pershing presents Douglas MacArthur with the Distinguished Service Cross for heroism on the battlefield

"MACARTHUR'S TENURE AS CHIEF OF STAFF WAS MARRED WITH THE DISPERSAL OF THE BONUS MARCHERS"

As he left West Point for the Philippines to be governor of the Military District of Manila, MacArthur married Louise Cromwell Brooks. The union, however, was unhappy; they divorced seven years later. He had become, meanwhile, the youngest major general in the Army. He returned to the US in 1925 and held commands at Fort McPherson, Georgia, and Fort McHenry, Maryland. He served on the controversial court martial of General Billy Mitchell, a pioneer aviator, and became president of the American Olympic Committee, leading preparations for the 1928 Summer Games in Amsterdam.

By 1929, MacArthur's affinity for the Philippines had grown further. He was ordered to the islands once again as commander of the Philippine Department. The following year he returned to the US to command the Army's IX Corps Area in California, and then became Chief of Staff of the Army in Washington, DC. His colourful personality, however, had already become a topic of discussion among fellow officers. Indeed, he often wore a Japanese kimono while working in his office and even hired his own public relations firm. As his career required more public contact, a distinct persona matured, albeit one with deep roots – back in 1905, an observer had written, "Arthur MacArthur was the most flamboyantly egotistical man I had ever seen, until I met his son."

MacArthur's tenure as chief of staff was marred by the dispersal of the Bonus Marchers, World War I veterans seeking payments for their military service. Against the advice of his aide, Major Dwight Eisenhower, MacArthur went to the scene where police and soldiers put the marchers to flight and burned their "town" at Anacostia Flats. The public relations backlash



Seated in an ornate chair at a French chateau during World War I, Brigadier General Douglas MacArthur holds a riding crop.

was temporary though, and MacArthur's career continued its rise. A Republican, he maintained good relations with Franklin D Roosevelt, the New Deal Democrat elected president in 1932.

In 1935, Philippine President Manuel Quezon asked his old friend MacArthur to come to the Philippines for the fifth time to organise the military forces of the Commonwealth. Roosevelt agreed, and MacArthur was given the rank of field marshal in the Filipino Army while retaining his major general's rank in the US Army and serving as military advisor to the Philippines. Eisenhower reluctantly accompanied him and years later wrote of his experiences with MacArthur, "I studied dramatics under him for five years in Washington and four years in the Philippines."

In 1937, MacArthur married Jean Faircloth. At the age of 57, he retired from the US



Police tangle with Bonus Marchers in Washington, DC. The dispersal of the marchers was a low point in MacArthur's long career

Army, and the following February their son, Arthur MacArthur IV, was born. His love of the Philippines influenced his decision to remain there as an advisor to President Quezon.

As war loomed in the Pacific in the summer of 1941, Roosevelt federalised the Philippine military and recalled MacArthur to active duty as commander of US forces in the Far East. Promoted to lieutenant general, he was responsible for war preparedness in the islands, which were sure to be a target of Japanese expansion. His subsequent conduct has been the subject of harsh scrutiny and is considered by many historians as the lowest point of his career in terms of command performance.

After the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor on the morning of 7 December 1941, word of the raid was flashed to the Philippines. The message was received in the late afternoon of 8 December (the Philippines is across the

International Date Line), and Army Chief of Staff General George C Marshall ordered the activation of prearranged war plans. Throughout the remainder of the day, MacArthur's headquarters received requests from the Far East Air Force (FEAF) to attack Japanese installations on the island of Formosa. These were denied. The Japanese, in the meantime, launched devastating air raids against installations across the Philippines, crippling the FEAF and destroying most of its aircraft on the ground.

The months that followed were harrowing. Japanese troops landed in force in the Philippines on 21 December and made rapid progress across the island of Luzon. MacArthur's defensive plan accomplished little in delaying the onslaught. The general ordered a retreat to the Bataan Peninsula and the island of Corregidor in central Luzon near

Manila. By Christmas Eve, Manila was declared an open city and MacArthur's troops grimly held their defensive positions, waiting in vain for reinforcements that never came.

MacArthur was ordered to leave the Philippines by President Roosevelt, and on 12 March 1942, he evacuated Luzon along with his family and a few close military associates. Arriving in Australia, he stood before the media and vowed, "I shall return!" Bataan fell to the Japanese on 9 April, and Corregidor four weeks later. The surrender of 76,000 American and Filipino soldiers on Bataan was the largest capitulation to an enemy in the history of the US armed forces.

In a controversial move, MacArthur was awarded the Medal of Honor for his conduct of the defence of the Philippines. However, the rank and file soldiers were often critical of his behaviour and particularly of his evacuation,



FATHER AND SON MEDALS

Arthur and Douglas MacArthur were the first father and son to both receive the Medal of Honor, their nation's highest military award

When General Douglas MacArthur received the Medal of Honor for his role in the defence of the Philippines against the Japanese, it was also the third time he had been recommended for the distinction during his long career with the US Army. Douglas, however, was not the first in his family to receive the medal. During the American Civil War, his father, Arthur MacArthur Junior, served in some of the costliest engagements of the conflict, including the battles of Murfreesboro, Chickamauga, Chattanooga and the Atlanta Campaign.

On 25 November 1863, MacArthur, an 18-year-old lieutenant in the 24th Wisconsin Infantry Regiment,

seized his unit's colours, charged to the summit of Missionary Ridge at Chattanooga and planted the flag atop the Confederate breastworks, inspiring the rest of the regiment to follow.

He was later promoted to colonel at the tender age of 19 and went on to achieve the rank of major general, serving in the Indian Wars, the Spanish-American War, and the Philippine Insurrection. Theodore Roosevelt and Theodore Junior are the only other father and son to receive the Medal of Honor, and this occurred in 2001, after a long delay in honouring the father for action at San Juan Hill during the Spanish-American War.



General Arthur MacArthur served as military governor of the Philippines during his long career. He died in 1912

referring to MacArthur as 'Dugout Doug'. The presentation of the medal has been viewed by some historians as a public relations ploy to present a positive image of the debacle to the American public.

Shortly after his arrival in Australia, MacArthur was appointed commander of Allied Forces in the Southwest Pacific Area. To counter the immediate threat of a Japanese invasion of Australia, he ordered Australian and American troops to the island of New Guinea, wresting the offensive from the enemy and fighting numerous high-stakes battles that eventually depleted Japanese strength. He also formulated a plan to advance along the coast of New Guinea to eventually invade the Philippines and liberate the islands.

In July 1944, MacArthur met with President Roosevelt and Admiral Chester Nimitz, Commander-in-Chief Pacific Ocean Areas, in Hawaii, to discuss strategy.

MacArthur wanted desperately to fight in the Philippines and pointed to America's obligation to deliver its people from oppression. Nimitz argued for a thrust against the Japanese in Formosa, bypassing the Philippines.

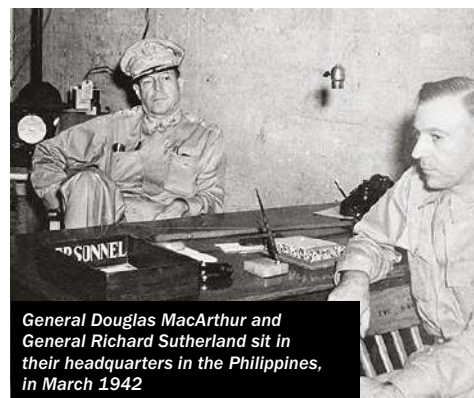
MacArthur won the day, and the invasion of the Philippines occurred on the island of Leyte on 20 October. Japanese resistance was determined, however,



General MacArthur and his entourage wade ashore at the Philippine island of Leyte on 20 October 1944

and when World War II ended in 1945, the campaign in the islands was still in progress.

On 2 September 1945, MacArthur presided over the surrender ceremony as Japanese envoys boarded the battleship USS Missouri in Tokyo Bay and signed the instrument of surrender. When the ceremony concluded, he said, "These proceedings are closed." However, the general's work was just beginning. MacArthur became the de facto ruler of occupied Japan, utilising the existing government apparatus, including the retention of Emperor Hirohito, to exert American authority. From 1945 to 1951, he conducted a masterful effort to demobilise the Japanese military, draft a new constitution for the nation, rebuild devastated cities and infrastructure, reinvigorate the Japanese economy, and enforce the sentences handed down against individuals convicted of war crimes during the International Military Tribunal for the Far East. At the same time, he rebuffed the Soviet Union's overtures to participate in the postwar



General Douglas MacArthur and General Richard Sutherland sit in their headquarters in the Philippines, in March 1942

administration of Japan and helped establish the country as a firm ally against communism in the burgeoning Cold War.

All the while, MacArthur's propaganda and public relations team churned out favourable tales for the media mill. Rumours circulated about a run for the presidency, and he quietly endorsed the efforts of supporters to gain the Republican Party's nomination in 1948 but did not actively campaign. President Harry Truman,

"STILL, THERE WAS ANOTHER CALL TO MILITARY SERVICE, ONE THAT DEVELOPED VIRTUALLY WITHOUT WARNING"



THE WAKE ISLAND MEETING

President Harry S. Truman and General Douglas MacArthur held a brief conference on Wake Island in the autumn of 1950

By October 1950, General Douglas MacArthur had led a reversal of the desperate military situation in Korea. Executing the risky but successful landing at Inchon, United Nations forces were advancing into North Korea. President Truman's concerns with the conduct of the war mounted, however, particularly considering MacArthur's popularity and his willingness to speak his mind on policy issues extending beyond his purview.

On 15 October, Truman flew to Wake Island in the Pacific, a great distance but necessary so that MacArthur would not be absent from his command for a lengthy period. The actual discussions were not recorded, and the tenor of the conversation

remains something of a mystery. However, it is known that MacArthur was asked point-blank about concerns that communist China or the Soviet Union might intervene in the Korean War. The general replied that there was "very little" chance of such an occurrence. During the coming months, he was proven tragically wrong.

Details of the meeting at Wake are sketchy, but it is believed the atmosphere was uncomfortable. Some accounts relate that MacArthur's plane circled the airfield because he wanted Truman to land first, and others say the general forced Truman to wait on him for 45 minutes. Eyewitness accounts render these stories as unsubstantiated.



The details of the meeting between President Truman and General Douglas MacArthur at Wake Island, in October 1950, are shrouded in conjecture

General Douglas MacArthur speaks to a crowd in Chicago after returning from command in the Far East during the Korean War



meanwhile, worked behind the scenes to block the effort, and the seeds were sown for continuing discord between the two leaders.

Still, there was another call to military service, one that developed virtually without warning. When North Korean soldiers crossed the 38th parallel on 25 June 1950, and invaded South Korea, MacArthur was designated Commander-in-Chief of United Nations Command. Initially, communist forces swept southward on the Korean peninsula, capturing the South Korean capital of Seoul and forcing the United Nations defenders, primarily American and South Korean troops, into the narrow pocket of the Pusan Perimeter.

In the opening phase of the Korean War, MacArthur had operated on a proverbial shoestring as men and materials were in short supply due to cutbacks in personnel and military spending in the wake of World

War II. Once sufficient strength was built, the general made perhaps the most desperate offensive gamble of his long military career. UN forces had held on grimly around Pusan, and MacArthur devised a daring end run and amphibious landing far to the north-west, at Inchon in the North Korean rear. The operation was fraught with peril, particularly because of enemy resistance and the tremendous variance in tides that occurred in the Inchon harbour. Nevertheless, MacArthur deemed the operation worth the risk.

The landings at Inchon were a resounding success, and the enemy was driven back across hundreds of miles. UN forces chased the communists across the 38th parallel and entered North Korea, until advisors warned that continued offensive operations might provoke the colossus of the People's Republic of China to intervene in support of its North Korean

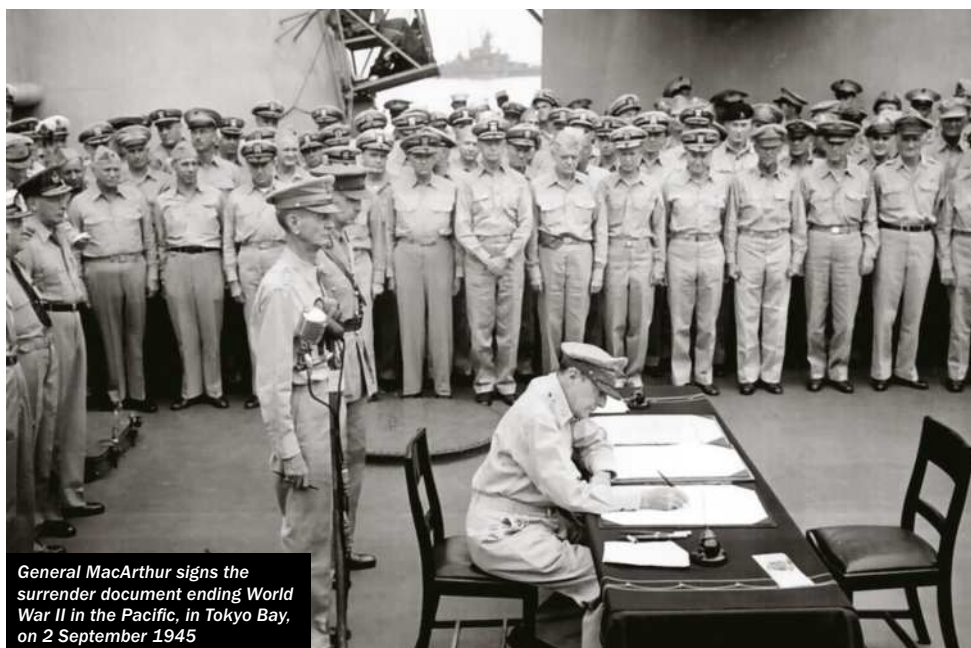
allies. MacArthur discounted this possibility. Indeed, he wanted to bomb Chinese territory to interrupt the flow of supplies to the enemy and, if necessary, to use nuclear weapons. In the autumn of 1950, however, an avalanche of Chinese troops struck the UN forces hard. MacArthur was compelled to fall back.

MacArthur was a master of rhetoric and fiery speech, never one to shy away from confrontation or to submit wholly to a higher authority. In an epic battle of wills, he clashed openly with President Truman over the conduct of the war in Korea. Truman, hoping to avoid a wider war in Asia that would have far-reaching implications, fired MacArthur on 11 April 1951, and explained to the American public that the preferred course of action was a limited war.

Despite the dust-up, MacArthur returned to the United States a hero. He was lauded with parades in several cities and addressed a joint session of Congress, concluding his remarks with a line from an old army barracks tune: "Old soldiers never die; they just fade away."

Political talk emerged once again, but Republicans chose his former aide, Dwight Eisenhower, for their party's nomination for the presidential election in 1952. The MacArthurs moved into a luxury suite at the Waldorf Astoria Hotel in New York, and the five-star general accepted the position of chairman with Remington Rand Corporation. During his later years, he met with presidents, returned to the Philippines one more time, and visited West Point again in 1962.

MacArthur died on 5 April 1964, at the age of 84. As he lay in state in the US Capitol, 150,000 people streamed past his casket. According to his wishes, one of the most successful and controversial military leaders in American history was buried in Norfolk, Virginia, near his mother.



General MacArthur signs the surrender document ending World War II in the Pacific, in Tokyo Bay, on 2 September 1945



George Marshall is one of
America's most decorated generals



GEORGE MARSHALL

ORGANISER OF VICTORY

From engineering Operation Overlord to forging NATO, George Marshall's legacy looms large over history

YEARS ACTIVE: 1914-1953
CONFLICTS: PHILIPPINES-AMERICAN WAR, WWI, WWII, KOREAN WAR, COLD WAR
RANK: CHIEF OF STAFF OF THE US ARMY

I hate to think that 50 years from now, practically nobody will know who George Marshall was," President Franklin Roosevelt told General Dwight D Eisenhower in November 1943. It's questionable if Roosevelt would be satisfied 75 years on. On the one hand, Marshall is one of the United States' most decorated generals and, among American military historians, he is arguably the most respected soldier after George Washington. However, if you stopped someone in the street and asked them who George Marshall was, would they know?

As Roosevelt explained, "Ike, you know and I know who was chief of staff during the last years of the Civil War, but practically no one else does... though the names of the field generals – Grant, of course, and Lee, and Jackson, Sherman, Sheridan and the others – every school boy knows them." Equally, American World War II generals, such as George Patton, Douglas MacArthur, and, of course, Eisenhower – all of whom were picked or recommended by Marshall – remain household names.

Roosevelt was angling to appoint Marshall the supreme commander for the Normandy

invasion, which as chief of staff of the US Army he had planned and persuaded Allied forces to accept. However, in the greatest professional disappointment of Marshall's otherwise illustrious career, it was not to be.

In recognition of his achievements during World War II, British Prime Minister Winston Churchill dubbed Marshall the "organiser of victory". This title perhaps suits Marshall better than supreme leader. While Marshall was not afraid to lead, he is best remembered for his determination, honesty, strategic vision and diplomatic skill, which allowed him to broker deals in the war rooms and hallways of power, and orchestrate Allied success in World War II.

George Catlett Marshall was born on 31 December 1880 in Uniontown, Pennsylvania, but he was made at the Virginia Military Institute (VMI). Once described as "the West Point of the South", his parents sent him to the spartan college in Lexington, Virginia, aged 16, hoping that strict military discipline would straighten out his youthful mischievousness and improve his grades.

While his first term was a struggle, the young Marshall showed the dogged tenacity that would define him as a man, vowing to succeed.

By his fourth year, Marshall was first captain, the highest ranking cadet on campus.

However, Marshall didn't only learn how to take orders, but also how to give them – and ensure they were carried out. The VMI taught him that being a good leader requires a decisive mind, strength in character, honesty and respect for those you desire respect from.



Marshall as a young colonel in 1919, when he worked as General John Pershing's aide-de-camp

In order to encourage others to hold a high standard of conduct, Marshall needed to set the example. VMI marked the beginning of a life-long process for Marshall: the building of integrity and strength in leadership.

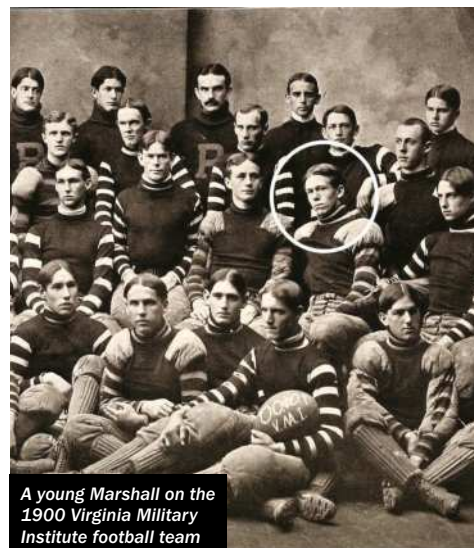
He graduated from VMI just as the world entered the 20th century. While VMI cadets did not automatically become soldiers, Marshall knew where his future lay – even when his parents told him he should pursue

a more 'respectable' career. After teaching briefly at the Danville Military Academy, also in Virginia, while he waited for his commission exam results, in 1902 he shipped off to the Philippines as a second lieutenant in the Army.

As a young officer, Marshall was given his first taste of battlefield leadership fighting in the Philippine-American War and taking on guerrilla groups. While he excelled himself there, in 1906 Marshall enrolled at an officer's training school at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas. He was eager for military promotion and knew more schooling would help his career. However, still aged just 25, he was the youngest student enrolled and also held the lowest rank at Leavenworth. Once again, Marshall buckled down and by the end of his first year was ranked number one in his class. Indeed, Leavenworth went so far as to hire him as an instructor after graduation.

A few years later, in 1913, Marshall was sent back to the Philippines. There he was put in charge of 5,000 soldiers who were to pretend they were invading the island from the sea. No doubt this experience was formative for Marshall's planning of the D-Day landings during World War II, but it also proved more immediately useful. When the US entered World War I, Marshall was assigned to the 1st Infantry Division as head of operations. After overseeing the division's mobilisation and organisation in Texas, he sailed across the Atlantic with the first ship of US soldiers and landed in France as second man ashore in late June. Marshall won recognition and acclaim for his planning of the attack for the Battle of Cantigny, the first notable American victory of the war.

However, when General John Joseph Pershing, the commander of the American



A young Marshall on the 1900 Virginia Military Institute football team

Expedition Force on the Western Front, came to inspect 1st Division, Marshall caused a furore. After Pershing dressed down the division commander in front of his troops for the level of his men's training, a loyal Major Marshall sprung to his defence. When Pershing dismissed his protests, Marshall lectured the general on how the problem actually stemmed from Pershing's own headquarters. While another rising star in the army's ranks with one eye on his career might have kept their head down at such a moment, Marshall couldn't resist doing the right thing. While many of his fellow officers were horrified and assumed he would be relieved of duty, Pershing appreciated Marshall speaking truth to power.

From mid-1918, Marshall was promoted to colonel and served directly under Pershing at headquarters, helping to plan the Meuse-Argonne Offensive. After the war, Marshall became Pershing's aide-de-camp, first



THE MARSHALL PLAN

As secretary of state, Marshall championed the rebuilding of war-torn Europe

Post-World War II Europe was in dire straits. Millions of its people had been killed or injured; capital cities and industrial heartlands had been carpet-bombed; and the disruption to farming meant that many regions were on the brink of famine. In contrast, 17 million new civilian jobs had been created in the US during the war, industrial productivity had increased by 96 per cent, and corporate profits had doubled.

George Marshall spearheaded the European Recovery Program (ERP) because, in his own words, "It is logical that the United States should do whatever it is able to do to assist in the return of normal economic health to the world, without which there can be no political stability and no assured peace."

President Harry Truman signed the Marshall Plan on 3 April 1948, and more than \$12 billion in aid (nearly \$100 billion in today's money) was distributed to 16 European nations. The largest amount of aid was given to major industrial powers in the belief this would help ensure the recovery across the continent. However, nations such as Italy, who had fought with the Axis powers alongside Nazi Germany, received less assistance per capita than those countries who fought with the Allies, with the notable exception of West Germany.

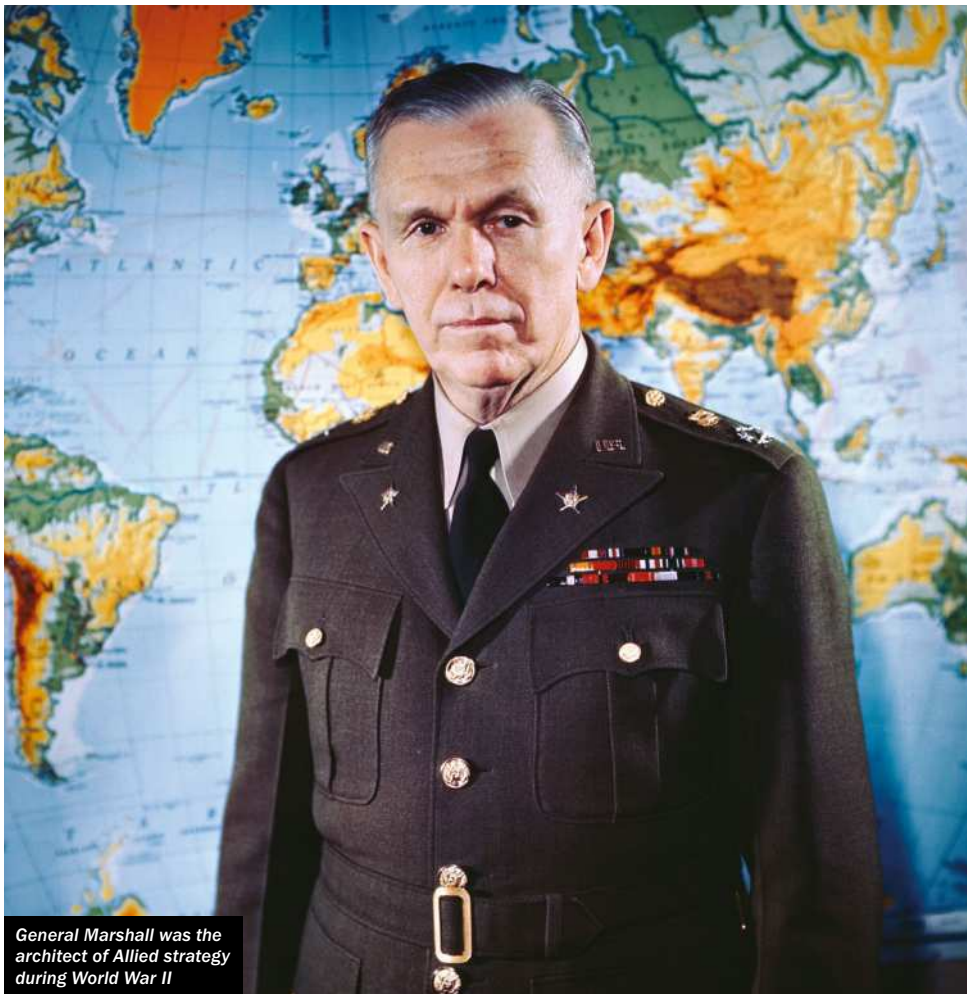
Awarded in the form of grants, there was no obligation for the Europeans to repay the aid given, but the countries did return roughly five per cent of the money to cover the administrative costs of the plan's implementation.



Label that was used on aid packages created and sent to Europe under the Marshall Plan



Allied leaders gather for the Yalta Conference of 1945, with Churchill, Roosevelt and Stalin seated left to right. Marshall is in the background, wearing the fur trim coat



“AN AGREEMENT HAD TO BE ESTABLISHED FOR A UNITED PLAN OF ACTION BETWEEN THE AMERICAN AND BRITISH GOVERNMENTS”

following him on a tour of Europe, then moving to Washington, DC when Pershing was made head of the entire US Army in 1921.

From 1924, Marshall was sent to Tianjin, in northern China, to oversee the troops protecting American businesses in the region. During his three-year tour, the ever-studious Marshall also learnt to speak Mandarin. During the 1930s, Marshall returned to the US with postings in Georgia, Illinois, and then Washington state.

In July 1938, Marshall was assigned to the War Plans Division in Washington, DC. The then-brigadier general attended a conference at the White House, in which President Franklin Roosevelt proposed a plan to provide England with aircraft. While every other attendee voiced support for the plan, Marshall disagreed, arguing it lacked consideration for logistical support or training. Like Pershing before him, Roosevelt appreciated candour and nominated Marshall for army chief of staff. He was sworn in on 1 September 1939 – the same day that Nazi Germany invaded Poland, triggering the six-year nightmare known as World War II.

While America didn't formally enter the conflict until 1941, Marshall was determined to be prepared. He oversaw the expansion of the US armed forces from a pre-war strength of under 200,000 to one of more than eight million by 1942 – a staggering 40-fold increase within just three years.

However, when the US was drawn into World War II, the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor meant the nation had to wage campaigns on two fronts: one in Europe, the other in the Pacific. An agreement had to be established for a united plan of action between the American and British governments. The strength of two powerful politicians, President Roosevelt and Prime Minister Winston Churchill, together with the rivalries between military branches that had to be set aside, made the collaboration an enormous challenge.

Marshall was instrumental in building this consensus, for instance, to agree to defeat the German military threat first, while forcing Churchill to also recognise that the Pacific theatre was more than a sideshow, as well as keeping the running feud between General



MacArthur and the US Navy from boiling over. Marshall also had to wage a public relations war at home, keeping Congress, the press, business leaders and labour unions on side.

By 1943, Marshall recognised that the Allied force's global coordination of troops and battles was finally beginning to go well. After several defeats, the Pacific fleet was on the offensive against Japan. In the Mediterranean, the Germans were being pushed out of north Africa, and Russian troops fighting with the Allies had scored victories against the Germans in the Soviet Union as well.

Based on these reports and his own observations, Marshall knew it was time to push hard for a plan to defeat the Nazis once and for all. Marshall's idea, supported by President Roosevelt, was to have Allied troops gather in Great Britain, cross the English Channel, and land on the beaches of France. From there the troops would push across Europe to victory. The British, on the other hand, preferred a different plan that involved invading Europe through Italy. In the autumn of 1943, the Allies finally agreed to Marshall's plan, which they code-named Operation Overlord. This top-secret invasion of France was scheduled for the early summer of 1944.

Many people, including British leaders, expected Marshall would lead this battle. However, despite Roosevelt's personal preference for Marshall over General Eisenhower, it was not that simple. When the rumours spread around Washington that Marshall would be transferred to Europe, Secretary of War Henry Stimson was besieged by congressmen. The revelation of a widespread and bipartisan feeling that the the war depended upon Marshall's retention of his present post seems to have impressed Roosevelt.

The commander-in-chief ultimately left the decision to Marshall to make himself who, characteristically, voluntarily renounced his



Marshall, who was always praised for his diplomatic skills, shakes hands with British Foreign Minister Ernest Bevin at a UNO meeting in 1948

If veteran such as Marshall forced the two enemies back to the negotiating table.

American strategy was based on the hope that making the two sides cooperate would have a moderating influence on both. The long-term goal was that a strong, united China would prevent the expansion of the Soviet Union. It was a long shot, but as far as Marshall was concerned, there really was no alternative.

The so-called Committee of Three, made up of Chiang Kai-shek, the Nationalist president of China, Communist leader Mao Zedong, and Marshall, showed early promise. By 10 January 1946, both sides had agreed to an immediate ceasefire and to attend a conference that would negotiate the eventual composition



Marshall advises Winston Churchill at a mass demonstration of US paratrooper techniques at Fort Jackson, Louisiana, on 7 June 1942

“THE LONG-TERM GOAL WAS THAT A STRONG, UNITED CHINA WOULD PREVENT THE EXPANSION OF THE SOVIET UNION”

By the spring of 1945, the Germans had surrendered and Europe was liberated. That victory carried Eisenhower to glory and fame in both Europe and throughout the world. Seven years after the war, the American people would even elect him as president of the United States.

Though Marshall retired from the Army after World War II, his service didn't end there. In December 1945, President Harry Truman sent him to China as the United States' special ambassador to negotiate an end to the Chinese Civil War. The Chinese nationalist government and the Chinese Communist Party had effectively been at loggerheads since 1920. They had maintained an uneasy alliance during the Japanese occupation of China, but once this threat was eliminated, the two sides raced to seize territory and build up their respective forces. They openly clashed. However, the appointment of a distinguished World War

of a coalition government. On 25 February, Marshall brokered an agreement to integrate the two sides' forces into one army and reduce its overall size.

But before any of the agreements could be put into place, renewed fighting broke out in Manchuria. The withdrawal of Soviet occupying troops from the industrial heartland in late March triggered a scramble, and in turn, widespread fighting. On 8 January 1947, an exasperated Marshall was recalled by Truman.

The eventual Communist victory in China led to some political recriminations. On 9 June 1951, Douglas MacArthur privately described the Marshall mission to China as “one of the greatest blunders in American diplomatic history”. Republican Senator Joe McCarthy went further: accusing Marshall of working in league with the communists as part of “a conspiracy so immense and an infamy so black as to dwarf any previous such venture in the

enduring ambition, saying that he wanted to do what was best for the country.

Six months later, troops under the command of Eisenhower surged onto the beaches of Normandy, in France. The D-Day invasion of 6 June 1944, was the turning point of the war. Despite incurring heavy casualties, the Allied forces pressed on. In the next nine months, they pushed the Nazi forces all the way back to Germany.



OPERATION OVERLORD BY NUMBERS

The statistics involved in the D-Day landings were phenomenal

As George Marshall planned, 32,000 Allied forces landed in France by midnight on 6 June 1944, while more than two million were eventually shipped there in total, comprising a total 39 divisions.

Thousands of vessels took part in the operation, including 139 major warships; 221 smaller combat vessels; more than 1,000 minesweepers; 4,000 landing craft; 805 merchant ships; 300 miscellaneous small craft; and 59 blockships, vessels that were intentionally scuttled off the coast to act as breakers for marine currents, making it easier for other ships to navigate.

Eleven-thousand aircraft also took part, including fighters, bombers, transports and gliders. The invasion force also had the support of around 350,000 members of the French Resistance, who launched hit-and-run attacks on German targets.

The initial air and seaborne landings had mixed results. On Utah Beach, resistance from the Germans was slight and US troops were off the beach by midday. But on Omaha, the Americans' lack of specialised armour meant the Germans were able to pin them down on the beach, resulting in a high casualty count. On Gold and Juno, the British and Canadian troops managed to get off their beaches quickly. By the afternoon they were moving inland towards Bayeux and Caen. On Sword, British troops were able to link up with airborne units that had been dropped further inland.

The operation was ultimately successful and marked a turning point in World War II, but it came at great human cost. Around 10,500 Allied troops are estimated to have been killed, wounded or reported missing.



Men of the 16th Infantry Regiment, US 1st Division, wade ashore on Omaha Beach



As US Army chief of staff, Marshall strategically planned but did not lead the D-Day landings



Marshall (centre) tries to prevent civil war in China by conducting negotiations between Chiang Kai-shek (left) and Mao Zedong (right)

history of man". Marshall's reaction to such demagoguery was nonchalant: "If I have to explain at this point that I am not a traitor to the United States, I hardly think it's worth it." On the more serious question of whether he could have done more to stop Mao's rise, he doesn't seem to have too many regrets. Even a commitment of several hundred thousand American troops would not have been sufficient to guarantee success, and it would have diverted scarce resources from "more vital regions", such as western Europe, where the US had "a reasonable opportunity of meeting or thwarting the Communist threat". This was exactly where Marshall turned his focus next.

Despite his many great accomplishments during World War II, Marshall is perhaps best known to school children for giving his name to the plan that was officially entitled the European Recovery Program (ERP). Appointed

Truman's secretary of state, Marshall helped deliver nearly \$13 billion in aid for the economic revitalisation of war-devastated Europe. The ERP was a solely American initiative, but this was not how Marshall had intended it. During the post-war Yalta Conference, Marshall had suggested to the Soviet Union that both nations should share the cost of rebuilding Europe. This proved anathema to Stalin, however, who also insisted the aid shouldn't be extended to the Eastern bloc, fearing American influence in the region.

As relations with the USSR continued to cool, Marshall also spearheaded ensuring western European security through the North Atlantic Treaty Organisation (NATO), which was signed in 1949. This military alliance between North America and Europe helped keep the peace during the Cold War, with the threat of mass retaliation – in which if any member was

★ ★ ★ MACARTHUR VS TRUMAN

How Marshall was caught in the middle of a showdown that transformed the United States

Ahead of the Korean War, President Harry Truman brought Marshall out of retirement once again, this time to serve as secretary of defence. While Truman wanted Marshall to end the conflict, the president had also hoped he could rein in General Douglas MacArthur. Appointed as commander of the United Nations forces fighting in Korea, MacArthur had repeatedly disregarded Truman's directives.

However, while Marshall had previously intervened to stop MacArthur's spat with the US Navy from escalating, this was different. While in principle Marshall believed in civilian control of the military, in practice, the lifelong soldier believed commanders have considerable scope to manoeuvre and act on their own judgement.

But on 6 April 1951, MacArthur went too far, going public with his differences with the president over the conduct of the war. As commander-in-chief, Truman thought this was nothing less than "rank insubordination" and five days later he announced to a shocked American people that he was relieving MacArthur of duty. This time Marshall backed Truman to the hilt, even going so far as to speak before a senate committee to dispute the viability of MacArthur's strategy in Korea.

While the changing of command in Korea undoubtedly shaped the way that the war played out, it also had a huge impact on the United States. Truman's actions proved the principle that civilian elected officials ranked above military officials. Generals ever since have taken that lesson, mostly notably the generals in Vietnam, who knew not to express their differences with Lyndon Johnson outside of the administration.



President Truman gives General MacArthur an award during the Wake Island Conference, in 1950, a stunt that didn't improve relations between the two men

attacked, the US would respond with a large-scale nuclear attack – acting as a deterrent against Soviet aggression. The alliance endures to this day and has evolved to address the changing nature of military threats, while also expanding from 10 to 29 member states. All in all, George Marshall deserves greater recognition, both as an American hero and for his defence of Europe from the totalitarian threat of both the Nazis and the Soviet Union.



Named fleet admiral after the disastrous Pearl Harbor attack, Chester Nimitz's leadership proved decisive in winning the Pacific



CHESTER NIMITZ

WINNING THE PACIFIC

Fleet Admiral Chester Nimitz led the US Pacific Fleet and its allies to victory against Imperial Japan in World War II

YEARS ACTIVE: 1905-1966
CONFLICTS: WWI, WWII
RANK: FLEET ADMIRAL

Three weeks after the surprise Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor and other US military installations in Hawaii, Admiral Chester W Nimitz took command of the battered Pacific Fleet. His flag was raised aboard the submarine USS Grayling for two reasons. Firstly, Nimitz was a long-time submariner. And secondly, there were simply no dry surface warship decks that were suitable for the ceremony. Every battleship in the fleet present during the Japanese attack had been sunk or heavily damaged.

For Nimitz, the task ahead was daunting. He had to restore morale, rebuild the combat capability of the US Navy in the Pacific, fight the overwhelming superiority of the Imperial Japanese Navy, and win the ultimate victory across the greatest expanse of ocean on Earth. But with grit, determination and a few calculated risks, he succeeded.

Nimitz, however, had not originally intended to embark on a naval career. As a teenager, he aspired to enter the US Military Academy at West Point, New York. His local congressman, however, delivered the bad news that there were no appointments available. There was,

though, another option. Nimitz could take a written examination and compete for a single opening at the US Naval Academy in Annapolis, Maryland. Despite having no real inclination to naval service, he took the exam and got the appointment, believing it presented the best chance for a poor boy to receive an education. Chester eventually graduated from the academy in 1905, ranking seventh in a class of 114.

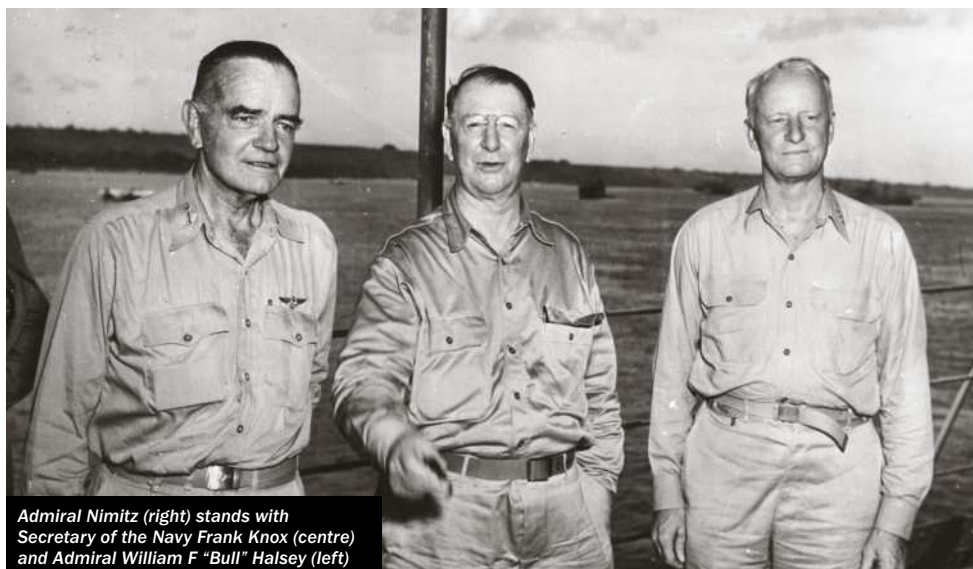
Ironically, Nimitz was born on 24 February 1885, in Fredericksburg, Texas, hundreds of miles from the sea. His frail father had died six months earlier, and his grandfather, Charles Henry Nimitz, a former merchant sailor born in Germany, was a profound influence on the young man's early years. The elder Nimitz regaled friends and family with fantastic seafaring stories – though they did not seem to captivate young Chester – and even constructed improvements to the family business, a Fredericksburg hotel, to make it resemble a sailing ship.

When World War II broke out, President Franklin D Roosevelt selected Nimitz, then serving as chief of the US Navy Bureau of Navigation, to replace discredited Admiral Husband E Kimmel as commander of the

Pacific Fleet. When Nimitz arrived in Hawaii, on 31 December 1941, Pearl Harbor was a shambles. He set to work, acknowledging that the submarine force would provide the most immediate means of hitting back at the Japanese and preparing to take offensive action as soon as possible. Nimitz decided early in his tenure to maintain overall command from Pearl Harbor, rather than joining his combat elements at sea. He was a clear and open-minded strategic thinker and relied on subordinates to assess tactical situations and act accordingly. This command perspective proved immensely successful. By 1941, his command style had developed after more than 35 years of naval service.

After graduating from Annapolis, Nimitz fulfilled the required two years of sea duty with a cruise to the Far East aboard the battleship USS Ohio. His recollections of that first foray were not altogether positive, and he later wrote, "I got frightfully seasick and must confess to some chilling of enthusiasm for the sea."

Commissioned as an ensign in 1907, Nimitz commanded the gunboat USS Panay and then the destroyer Decatur. His naval career ended almost before it began when the



Admiral Nimitz (right) stands with Secretary of the Navy Frank Knox (centre) and Admiral William F "Bull" Halsey (left)

"THE TASK WAS DAUNTING, BUT WITH GRIT, DETERMINATION AND A FEW CALCULATED RISKS, HE SUCCEEDED"



Admiral Nimitz rides in a Jeep on the island of Saipan with Admirals Raymond Spruance and Richmond Kelly Turner

Decatur ran aground while under his command and the young officer was court martialed and reprimanded. Transferring to the Atlantic, he spent the next five years working with a new weapon of war, the submarine, and saved the life of a drowning sailor while serving aboard the USS Skipjack. For this act of bravery, he received the Silver Lifesaving Medal.

Nimitz worked diligently to become an expert on diesel propulsion systems. Recognised as the Navy's foremost authority on the subject, he was assigned to work with the construction of engines for the fleet oiler USS Maumee in early 1913 and later sent to Nuremberg, Germany, and Ghent, Belgium, to observe construction of diesels there. When the engines were installed aboard Maumee, Nimitz became the ship's executive officer.

During World War I, Nimitz served on the staff of the US Atlantic Submarine Command, and in September 1918 he worked with the board of submarine design and with the office of the chief of naval operations. Through the interwar years, he supervised the construction of a submarine base at Pearl Harbor, served as executive officer aboard the battleship USS South Carolina and the cruiser Chicago, attended the Naval War College, and established the Naval Reserve Officers Training Corps programme at the University of California, Berkeley, while also teaching naval science and technology. In 1933, he assumed his most prestigious command at sea, serving as skipper of the cruiser USS Augusta, flagship of the Asiatic Fleet.

Shortly after taking command of the Pacific Fleet in the dark early days of World War II, Nimitz was named commander of all Allied forces in Pacific Ocean Areas. During the first six months of the Pacific War, he actively struck the Japanese wherever the US Navy was capable. At the Battle of the Coral Sea in May 1942, his aircraft carrier task forces blunted a Japanese thrust toward Port Moresby on the island of New Guinea, a potential staging area for an invasion of Australia. A month later, naval intelligence confirmed that the Japanese intended to strike at the US naval presence on Midway Atoll, about 1,313 miles (2,113 kilometres) from Hawaii.

Although his forces were at a distinct numerical disadvantage, Nimitz had no choice but to confront the enemy threat. Risking a possibly irretrievable blow to the balance of power in the Pacific, he committed his aircraft carrier strength to the Midway operation with the cool temperament of a riverboat gambler. At sea, his commanders, Admirals Raymond A Spruance and Frank Jack Fletcher, conducted



A PACT AMONG FRIENDS

Admiral Chester Nimitz chose a burial place that overlooked the Pacific Ocean and invited others to join him at rest

After Fleet Admiral Chester W Nimitz died, on 20 February 1966, of a stroke and complicating pneumonia, four days prior to his 81st birthday, he might have been buried in Virginia at Arlington National Cemetery, the most recognised shrine to America's heroes. Instead, he had already made his wishes concerning a final resting place known. Nimitz chose the Golden Gate National Cemetery in San Bruno, California, near the Pacific Ocean where he had spent considerable time during his naval career. He also went one step further.

The great admiral had forged lifelong friendships with other Navy men and invited them to be buried near him. "While I fully understand and appreciate the decision of the quartermaster general to make no grave site reservations in the Golden Gate

Cemetery for other officers, I earnestly request that Admiral Raymond A Spruance, USN (Retired), and Admiral RK Turner, USN (Retired) upon their deaths be given grave sites adjoining those which have been reserved for Mrs Nimitz and me..." the admiral wrote in September 1952.

Spruance had commanded naval task forces in pivotal battles of World War II. Turner had overseen multiple amphibious landings in the Pacific. Admiral Charles Lockwood, commander of the Pacific Submarine Force, was another close friend who was included. Today, these four heroes and their wives rest together where many of the American personnel who died in World War II are also interred. Their graves are located on the first row along a street that is fittingly named Nimitz Drive.



Fleet Admiral Chester Nimitz is buried in the Golden Gate National Cemetery in San Bruno, California, with his wife and naval comrades



COURT MARTIAL OF CHESTER NIMITZ

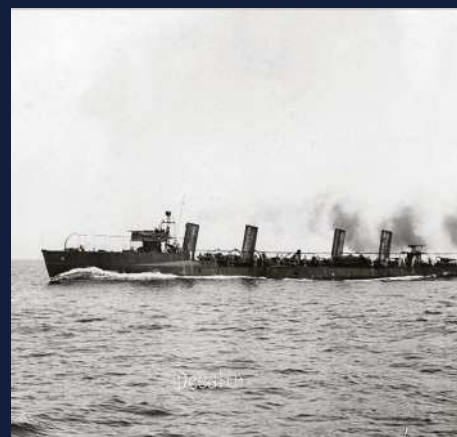
As a young officer, Chester Nimitz narrowly averted dismissal from the US Navy when his ship was grounded

On the night of 7 July 1908, 22-year-old Ensign Chester Nimitz was in command of the destroyer USS Decatur as the warship entered Batangas Harbor, south of Manila in the Philippine Islands.

It was unusual for such a young officer to have command of a destroyer, and indeed the post nearly proved the early undoing of Nimitz's naval career. Navigating into the harbour, Nimitz had estimated the ship's position rather than taking specific bearings. He then compounded the error by not verifying the direction of the tide. As a result, the destroyer ran aground on a mud bank and had to be pulled off by a small steamboat the following day. Nimitz found himself in trouble.

The ensign was charged with "culpable inefficiency in the performance of duty" and brought before a court martial. During the proceedings, he took full responsibility for the failure. Nimitz was convicted of the lesser offense of "neglect of duty" and was publicly reprimanded.

The fact that his record was unblemished prior to the incident, as well as the poor quality of the available navigational charts of the harbour, no doubt helped his situation. Indeed, 18 months later, Ensign Nimitz was promoted to lieutenant, jumping over the lower rank of lieutenant junior grade. History has proven that the lenient verdict and second chance were both wise decisions.



The Bainbridge-class destroyer USS Decatur steams ahead during trials in 1902. The ship played a prominent role in Chester Nimitz's career

a masterful battle and dealt the Japanese a severe defeat as US carrier aircraft sank four enemy aircraft carriers. Midway was the turning point in the Pacific War.

In August 1942, forces under Nimitz's strategic command landed on the island of Guadalcanal in the Solomon Islands archipelago, conducting the first US offensive action of the war on land. As the long push toward the home islands of Japan got underway, the Navy and Marine Corps conducted amphibious landings in the Gilbert, Marshall and Mariana Islands. Meanwhile, the growing strength of the US Navy won tremendous victories in the epic battles of the Philippine Sea and Leyte Gulf while under the command of Spruance and Admiral William F 'Bull' Halsey. While Nimitz had favoured an American thrust toward the Japanese-held island of Formosa, bypassing the Philippines, he coordinated with General Douglas MacArthur, Allied commander in the South Pacific, during the island-hopping campaign and the invasion of New Guinea and the Philippines that combined to win the war.

On 19 December 1944, Nimitz was promoted to the five-star rank of fleet admiral, and by early 1945, Japan was on the defensive everywhere in the Pacific. Nimitz authorised the invasions of Iwo Jima in February and Okinawa in April. These landings were followed by weeks of brutal combat, but the eventual American victories provided forward bases for the anticipated invasion of Japan itself. Thousands of Marines, US Army and Navy personnel were killed or wounded in combat on land and aboard ships. Speaking of the courage displayed at Iwo Jima, Nimitz remarked, "Uncommon valour was a common virtue."

During the Japanese surrender ceremonies, on the deck of the battleship USS Missouri in Tokyo Bay, on 2 September 1945, Nimitz

"THE MASTERFUL BATTLE DEALT THE JAPANESE A SEVERE DEFEAT – MIDWAY WAS THE TURNING POINT IN THE PACIFIC WAR"

represented the United States and signed the instrument of surrender document. At the end of the year, he succeeded Admiral Ernest J King as the chief of naval operations. He served in the post for two years and was instrumental in obtaining authorisation to develop nuclear propulsion systems in the post-war navy. He later worked as a special assistant to the secretary of the navy, as an envoy for the United Nations, and as a regent of the University of California.

Although fleet admirals technically remain active for life, Nimitz quietly retired to the Berkeley, California, area with his wife, Catherine, and lived in naval quarters at San Francisco Bay until his death at the age of 80, on 20 February 1966. Nimitz is remembered as a skilled and diplomatic naval strategist, the architect of the US victory over the Imperial Japanese Fleet in World War II, and one of the greatest naval heroes in US history.



On 27 May 1942, Admiral Nimitz pins the Navy Cross on Doris Miller, a hero during the attack on Pearl Harbor



A statue of Admiral Chester Nimitz stands at Pearl Harbor, where he took command of the Pacific Fleet in World War II



George Smith Patton Jr,
four star army general



GEORGE S PATTON

A MILITARY MASTERMIND

Brash, brutal and brave, a complex man with a genius for war, George S Patton was truly an extraordinary American

YEARS ACTIVE: 1916-1945
CONFLICTS: PUNITIVE EXPEDITION, MEXICO, WWI, WWII
RANK: MAJOR GENERAL

George S Patton looms over the landscape of US military history as a true colossus, America's "greatest fighting general", according to Franklin D Roosevelt, a man whose name is synonymous with the apogee of tank warfare. Such was his reputation that in the run up to the Normandy invasions of World War II, the Allies dreamed up a non-existent Army Group Patton, whose name was leaked to the Germans, which then prompted a massing of defences against this ghost army. By the time Patton had wielded his significant influence in bringing WWII to an end in Europe, he commanded 18 divisions and 540,000 troops, a force comparable in size to the apex of American military power during the conflict in Vietnam.

There are many exploits that cast light upon his military excellence and his impetuosity, including his remarkable achievements during the Battle of the Bulge when the final great German counter-offensive faltered in the wake of his decision to wheel his army and drive it 100 miles through the ice-packed Ardennes before crashing into the enemy flank with a full 17 divisions. Shortly after, when advancing

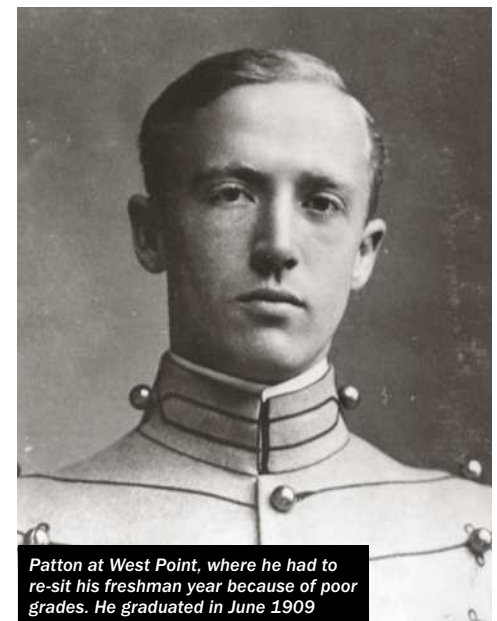
through Trier, Eisenhower, the Supreme Allied Commander in Europe, recommended that Patton bypass this heavily fortified city because it would take four divisions to capture it. To this, Patton replied, "Have taken Trier with two divisions. Do you want me to give it back?" He loved the last word.

And words fall easily on Patton; they cast him in light and dark. He is a man who divides opinion. "A warlord fighting in the age of democracy," writes Pulitzer Prize-winning historian Rick Atkinson in the introduction to Patton's memoir, *War As I Knew It*, and certainly he was a brash, unrepentant, "aristocratic snob", the virtuosity of his military career tempered to some degree by a number of controversial opinions and actions. He espoused anti-Semitic and anti-African-American views throughout his life, although some historians deny he was overtly racist.

Patton was from a family of privilege. He married a fabulously wealthy heiress; he was deeply religious, praying quietly in private before cursing foully in public. He held almost mystical beliefs, subscribing to the idea of reincarnation; he believed that he had lived

the life a great warrior many times over. "It is my destiny to lead the biggest army ever assembled under one flag," he said, before adding, "God isn't going to let me be killed before I do."

Indeed, given his family's military pedigree it is easy to see why Patton thought he might



Patton at West Point, where he had to re-sit his freshman year because of poor grades. He graduated in June 1909

be born to battlefield brilliance – according to family lore, his forefathers fought for Bonnie Prince Charlie in their native country of Scotland. Among his ancestors was Hugh Mercer, a veteran of the French and Indian Wars who fell in the Battle of Princeton during the War of Independence. His grandfather and great-uncle died in the American Civil War fighting for the Confederacy.

He dressed impeccably in a colourful uniform bedecked with stars, wearing knee-high boots and garnishing his outfit with ivory-handled pistols. He read extensively – Homer, the Bible, and Kipling ranking among his favourites – and could quote verses at length. He was an expert on military history and became fluent in French. As well as family tradition, his confidence and military acumen were also built upon carefully constructed foundations. Few commanders worked as diligently to prepare themselves for martial prominence as George S Patton.

Patton was born on 11 November 1885, in San Gabriel, California, and though an intelligent boy he suffered from undiagnosed dyslexia, which stunted his formal education. He spent a year at the Virginia Military Institute

and then transferred to West Point, though he was forced to repeat his freshman year because of poor grades. When he graduated in June 1909, he was commissioned as a second lieutenant in the US Cavalry. On 26 May 1910, he married Beatrice Banning Ayer, the daughter of the industrialist Frederick Ayer.

Patton's first posting was to the 15th Cavalry at Fort Sheridan, Illinois, before being transferred to Fort Meyer, Virginia. In 1912, Patton was selected as the Army's entry for the first modern pentathlon at the 1912 Olympic Games in Sweden, where he finished fifth overall. He was selected for the 1916 Games as well, though these were cancelled because of the war in Europe. In the aftermath of the games he travelled to France to further his studies in fencing and learned much about the art of sword craft. Upon his return to Fort Myer, Patton reformatted the sabre combat doctrine for the US Cavalry and set about redesigning their sword. He insisted that a thrusting attack was preferential to a traditional slashing motion, and in 1912 the cavalry placed the first 20,000 orders for the 'Patton sword'.

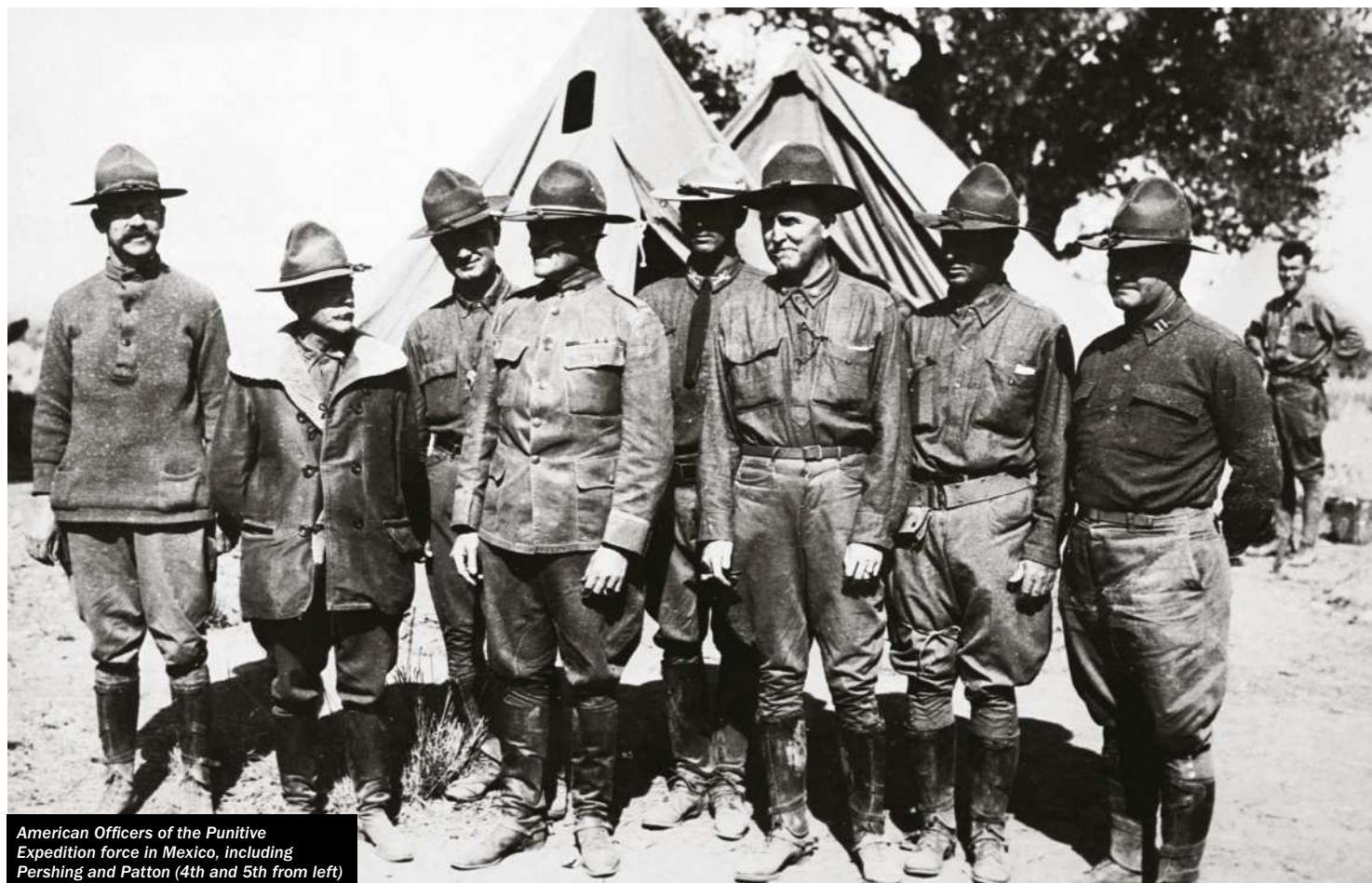
Throughout his youth, Patton proved a vigorous,

even reckless, sportsman and he suffered so many blows to the head playing football and polo that some historians have suggested that these might have contributed to some of his more erratic behaviour as an adult.

So bright was this rising star that Brigadier General John Pershing selected Patton as his aide for the 1916 Punitive Expedition against the bandit Pancho Villa in Mexico. Here success in battle came quickly, with Patton emerging as the victor in a gunfight against Julio Cardenas, the commander of Villa's personal bodyguard. In the wake of the shootout, the Americans strapped the bloodied corpses of three dead Mexicans across the hoods of the automobiles, "like trophies of a hunt," writes one leading historian, before Patton drove back to camp and straight into the newspaper headlines. "This Patton boy," Pershing enthused, "he's a real fighter."

In May 1916, this "real fighter" was promoted to first lieutenant, and one year later he was made captain, sailing for Europe with Pershing as his personal aide. America had entered World War I and it was in France that Patton first developed an interest in tanks. He was dazzled by the British use of armour to break the German line at Cambrai in November 1917 and he became the first member of the American Tank Corps. His dedication to his

"FEW COMMANDERS WORKED AS DILIGENTLY TO PREPARE THEMSELVES FOR MARTIAL PROMINENCE AS GEORGE S. PATTON"



American Officers of the Punitive Expedition force in Mexico, including Pershing and Patton (4th and 5th from left)



Lieutenant Colonel George S Patton at the Tank Corps School, near Langres, France, July 1918

subject was as zealous as ever, and he was soon promoted to major, overseeing the training of this nascent corps. He even designed the uniforms. When the first ten of 25 Renault-built tanks arrived with the Americans, Patton was the only man who could drive them and he personally moved each one off the train.

On 12 September 1918, now a lieutenant colonel, Patton led the first American tank units into battle during the Saint-Mihiel offensive. In truth, this violated orders – brigade commanders were not supposed to lead their men in person – and though his courageous conduct did much to ensure a positive outcome, he was admonished by his commanding officer, Colonel Samuel Rockenbach, who told a post-war audience that Patton foolishly “saw his duty to go in the fight on top of a tank”. In the Meuse-Argonne offensive a few weeks later, a machine-gun bullet struck Patton with great force in his leg and he was badly wounded. He lay marooned on the battlefield for at least two hours before he was evacuated. Following this, he was soon promoted to the temporary rank of colonel and earned the Distinguished Service Cross for bravery under fire.

In the aftermath of WWI, Patton reverted to the permanent rank of captain and in 1931 entered the Army War College where his research paper was forwarded to the War Department with a note that it was a ‘work of exceptional merit’. Ever the military thinker, he lobbied vigorously for the development of American tank forces and argued that Pearl Harbor was vulnerable to Japanese attack. His concerns appear to be the first-ever prophecy

for the disaster that befell American forces in Hawaii on 7 December 1941, and it was made long before Roosevelt stationed the majority of the Pacific Fleet on the islands as a supposed deterrent to Japanese aggression.

Patton was promoted to colonel in 1938, and in 1940 he was made temporary brigadier general. In December of that year, as America prepared for a possible entry into World War II, he sent 6,500 troops and almost 1,200 tanks on a 270-mile road march from Fort Benning to Florida and back to check their ability to move with discipline. On 4 April 1941, he was promoted to temporary major general, and a week later he was made commander of the 2nd Armored Division. By the summer, his exploits with the recruits at Fort Benning had earned press attention, and in July he was featured on the cover of *Life* magazine.

Following the attack on Pearl Harbor, Patton set up the Desert Training Center near Indio, California, to simulate combat manoeuvres in the harsh, rugged deserts of North Africa. His experience there saw him appointed to help plan the Allied invasion of French North Africa as part of Operation Torch in the summer of 1942. In November of that year, he was given command of the Western Task Force and with three divisions and 34,000 men he landed on Morocco's Atlantic seaboard. Co-ordinating with landings on the Mediterranean coast, the Allies pushed towards Casablanca, which was held by Vichy French forces.



PATTON: A HOLLYWOOD LEGEND

The 1970 military biopic *Patton*, starring George C Scott, won seven Academy Awards and cemented the general's place in American folklore

For many Americans, their image of George S Patton is coloured almost completely by the performance of George C Scott in this powerful, brilliantly constructed film, directed by Franklin J Schaffner from a script by Francis Ford Coppola and Edmund H North. The opening scene, where Patton stands ramrod straight on an empty stage, framed by a vast American flag, is etched in the minds of millions. The film presented many truths and captured many of its subject's foibles, though as with almost all film biopics, there is an inevitable distortion.

The film opens with Patton's command of II Corps following the debacle at Kasserine Pass, and takes in the greatest hits, and misses, of his life during World War II. The distortion, however, comes from the books upon which the screenplay is based – the biography *Patton: Ordeal and Triumph* by Ladislav Farago and Omar Bradley's memoir *A Soldier's Story*.

Indeed, Bradley, his great rival, served as the movie's main military advisor, a fact that would have irked Patton beyond belief. For, as one of Patton's biographers notes, it is ironic that, “Bradley received a considerable sum... for his professional consultation about a comrade-in-arms he despised and never understood”. It should come as no surprise, then, that while Patton is often presented as preening and vainglorious (which he was), Bradley is called ‘the GI's general,’ and is presented as being a solid, sound sort of chap. The film has a number of anachronisms, among the most frustrating for those with a military bent is the use of post-war tanks during the battle scenes, but it remains a powerful portrait well worthy of its many accolades.



George C Scott won the Oscar for Best Actor for his role in *Patton* but declined to accept the award, citing his disapproval of acting competitions

“HIS CONCERNS APPEAR TO BE THE FIRST-EVER PROPHECY FOR THE DISASTER THAT BEFELL AMERICAN FORCES IN HAWAII”



Patton wades ashore on a beach during a campaign to liberate Sicily, Italy in 1943

Casablanca fell on 11 November and Patton negotiated an armistice. The Sultan of Morocco was so impressed with Patton's command and demeanour that he showered the American victor with gifts and laid on lavish displays of pomp and pageantry. Casablanca earned Patton his second Distinguished Service Cross, though the man himself was still frustrated. For all the glory falling upon him, Patton had by this stage only spent five days under fire during WWI, while combat in North Africa had thus far counted for only four days. He was eager for further action.

He got his chance following the disastrous defeats inflicted upon the Americans by a strong German counter-offensive in North Africa that saw Eisenhower's First Army mauled at Sidi-Bou-Zid and Kasserine. The US II Corps suffered 6,000 casualties in these two battles, prompting Eisenhower's naval aide to write in his diary of "one of the greatest defeats in our history". In March 1943, Patton was given command of the II Corps, declaring with his typical bombast that he would "smash the Germans with it".

The smashing unfolded in Sicily. With the Axis forces eventually shunted out of North Africa, the Allies saw that this key Mediterranean island lay within their grasp. Churchill was keen to remove Italy from the war and an invasion of Sicily, known as Operation Husky, was launched on 10 July 1943. Patton, now promoted to the temporary rank of lieutenant general, led the US Seventh Army into Sicily where he refused to simply protect the British flank and instead unleashed his armour in a rapid strike that overran Palermo. He then took Messina in August, ahead of the British and Montgomery (who would emerge as a hated rival). Though plenty of the Axis forces evacuated to the Italian mainland, in just 38 days Patton had ensured Sicily's capture, claiming 44,000 prisoners.

"FOR ALL THE GLORY FALLING UPON HIM, PATTON HAD BY THIS STAGE ONLY SPENT FIVE DAYS UNDER FIRE DURING WWI"



A CAREER IN CRISIS

The striking of two hospitalised soldiers in two separate incidents, almost brought Patton's career crashing around his ears

In his memoir, *War As I Knew It*, the most controversial moments in Patton's career are given precious little space. And yet his slapping of two hospitalised soldiers who showed no outward signs of injury almost cost him his carefully constructed career. The first incident occurred on 3 August 1943, when Patton visited the 15th Evacuation Hospital outside Nicosia, Sicily, where he met Pvt. Charles Kuhl, who had no visible wounds.

When asked what ailed him, Kuhl replied, "I guess I just can't take it". Patton cursed the soldier, called him a coward, and ordered him out of the tent. When the private remained motionless, Patton, according to witnesses, struck him with a glove and

pushed him out of the tent with a kick in the rear. Kuhl was later diagnosed with chronic dysentery and malaria.

A week later, Patton met Pvt. Paul Bennett at the 93rd Evacuation Hospital near San Stefano, Sicily. Bennett said that his nerves couldn't stand the constant shelling. This infuriated Patton, who after drawing his pistol settled upon slapping Bennett across the face. The incidents caused uproar when they were eventually leaked to the press – the slaps echoing around the world – forcing Eisenhower to admonish his friend, though secretly the commander-in-chief was more sympathetic to Patton than he let on in public.



Like many good commanders, Patton regularly visited his wounded troops like these men awaiting transfer to hospital



Ever the showman, Patton preferred an ivory handled revolver, like these two from his personal collection

lost his position as he once more courted controversy – this time when speaking at a club at Knutsford, England. He declared as part of his speech that, “since it is the evident destiny of the British and Americans, and of course, the Russians, to rule the world, the better we know each other, the better job we will do.”

Unbeknown to Patton, a reporter was present and as the news hit the wire services, people were led to believe that Patton really thought Britain and America (many reports omitted the Russians) would one day rule the globe. With this second scandal breaking, Eisenhower was furious and fumed, “I am just about fed up. If I have to apologise for George once more I’m going to have to let him go, valuable as he is.” Again, though, Eisenhower’s appreciation of his friend’s talent shone through and he shouldered the responsibility for retaining Patton as commander of the Third Army. It was a sound move. Patton was about to prove his worth with a string of crushing victories in France.

Indeed, the invasion of Normandy was the crowning glory of Patton’s career. His armoured units were not operational until 1 August, almost two months after D-Day, but by the end of that month, they had captured Mayenne, Laval, Le Mans, Reims, and Châlons. Much like the Germans at the start of the war, Patton appreciated the power of Blitzkrieg, and his lightning-fast assaults, though often chaotic, came to embody the relentless, restless demands of his generalship. According to celebrated military historian John Keegan, the Third Army’s breakthrough was the first and last time a western army used Blitzkrieg in the course of the war.

In keeping with the Blitzkrieg ideal, Patton felt that not only should his armour aspire to the brutal penetration of the enemy line, but that it should, where possible, encircle and destroy any enemy forces that lay beyond the point of break in. An opportunity to do just that arose when the advancing British and American armies formed a pocket that looked set to entrap two German armies at Falaise.

The Battle of the Falaise Gap was the largest clash of armour ever seen in the west and it crippled the German defence of Normandy. The once-mighty German Army Group B was splintered and the road to Paris lay open. Hesitation from Bradley permitted a large pocket of German troops to escape (figures range between 20,000-40,000) but Patton’s Third Army was free to rumble forward; it halted only when logistical problems saw it run out of fuel. Still, by 25 September, Patton had reached the Moselle River, north of Metz. “The Thousand Year Reich,” writes Atkinson, “was in its death throes.”



Patton visits men of 1303rd Engineers, whose completed bridge across the Sauer River linked Luxembourg and Germany, 20 February 1945

It was during August 1943 that the stories of his infamous slapping of American soldiers reached the ears of Eisenhower, though the latter used his influence to keep the scandal out of the newspapers. However, in November the story was leaked and formed a sensational radio news story. Though much public opinion raged against Patton, Eisenhower realised that the great warrior could not be sacrificed on the altar of public opinion.

However, Patton’s impetuosity meant that he was overlooked for what should have been his rightful command – the First Army forming in England in preparation for the Normandy landings. The command went to his great rival and former subordinate, Omar Bradley.

As the operation edged towards its launch, in spring 1944 Eisenhower relented and granted Patton command of the newly-formed Third Army, though the combustible general almost



Patton's first combat in WWII came with action in North Africa. Here he has taken command of II Corps after defeat at the Kasserine Pass



Patton (left) and Supreme Allied Commander Eisenhower had a tumultuous but effective working relationship

And yet Germany was not quite done. Patton's frustration reared up once more with Eisenhower's insistence that the Allies advance a final push along a broad front, with the British in the north and the Germans in south moving on a parallel alignment. This slowed the Third Army once more and allowed Germany time to bolster its defences, and to launch one more massive counter-strike. In December 1944 the Germans launched a surprise counterattack through the Ardennes Forest, encircling the American 101st Airborne Division at Bastogne in Belgium.

Recognising the need for speed, Eisenhower ordered the Third Army to relieve the 101st, and Patton repositioned his force with great haste. Thanks to intelligence that had been gathered by Colonel Oscar Koch, Patton had expected such a move from the Germans, and his exploits in what became known as the Battle of the Bulge have long since passed into military folklore. Patton completely ruptured the German offensive, and by the end of January 1945, had reached the German frontier. He took Trier and Saar with a dazzling display of generalship, and in less than two weeks

had forced 12 divisions across the Moselle River before looping behind German lines. By the time they had joined the Seventh Army in sweeping through the Palatinate, the Third had amassed 100,000 prisoners and crushed another two German armies.

Patton hoped to push on to Berlin, but Eisenhower held him back. The Allied Supreme Command did not want to sully the terms of the Yalta agreement, which had granted that victory to Russia. And yet few could argue with Patton's success in Europe. By the time Germany capitulated on 8 May 1945, his Third Army had taken more than 80,000 square miles and inflicted in excess of a million casualties in just nine months. The cost had been high, but Patton's glory had been won.

“ROBBED OF FURTHER MILITARY GLORY, PATTON SEEMED TO FESTER AND HE MADE UNSAVOURY REMARKS ABOUT JEWISH INFLUENCE”

TIMELINE

George S Patton is born

He is born in San Gabriel, California, to George Smith Patton Senior and his wife Ruth Wilson. Patton has a younger sister, Anne, who was nicknamed Nita.

11 November 1885

Competes in Olympics

He is selected as the Army's entry for the first modern pentathlon at the 1912 Olympic Games in Stockholm and finishes fifth, the highest placing of any non-Swede.

Summer 1912

Graduates West Point

Patton is ranked 46 out of 103 cadets at West Point, and upon graduation is commissioned as a second lieutenant in the 15th Cavalry at Fort Sheridan, Illinois Army.

11 June 1909

Fights in Punitive Expedition

This expedition is launched in retaliation for Pancho Villa's attack on the town of Columbus, New Mexico. Brigadier General John J Pershing, who appoints Patton as his aide, leads the expedition and is impressed by Patton's warrior skills. Patton wins a shootout with Julio Cárdenas, taking the latter's spurs as a souvenir. In a grisly turn, the Americans strap Cárdenas along with two other dead villistas to the bonnets of their vehicles for their return journey. This conflict is notable for being America's first use of motorised transport in combat – something for which Patton would become famous.

March 1916

Sets sail for WWI

Patton is included in Pershing's advance party that sails to Europe upon America's entry into the First World War. In France, he goes on to organise the first American tank school.

28 May 1917

Saint-Mihiel Offensive

He takes command during his country's first-ever tank battle. Ignoring orders to stay in radio contact, Patton personally leads tank units into battle during the Saint-Mihiel offensive.

12 September 1918

Meuse-Argonne Offensive

Again, Patton personally leads tanks into battle in this vital victory for the Americans during WWI. He is wounded in battle and lies in a shell hole for several hours before eventually being evacuated.

26 September 1918

Graduates Army War College

Patton finishes Army War College as a "Distinguished Graduate". His research paper was forwarded to the War Department with a note that it was a 'work of exceptional merit'.

June 1932

Takes first command

Promoted to colonel, Patton takes command of the 5th Cavalry at Fort Clark, Texas, before being reassigned to Fort Myer as commander of the 3rd Cavalry.

24 July 1938

With the curtain falling on the European theatre, Patton campaigned vigorously for a command in the Pacific. Instead he was made the military governor of Bavaria, a political position for which he was ill-suited. He irritated Eisenhower further with his reluctance to carry out his de-Nazification programme. He had seen the Reich's atrocities at close quarters with the liberation of concentration camps, and yet thought he could make better use of Nazis by using them as administrators.

Robbed of the opportunity for further military glory, Patton seemed to fester and he made unsavoury remarks about Jewish influence. According to Atkinson, "He showed signs of turning into a full-fledged crank". On 2 October 1945, he was removed as commander of the Third Army and was relieved of his position as military governor. To avoid a public humiliation he was granted the largely titular command of the Fifteenth Army.

In December 1945, shortly before he was due to leave Germany, Patton's car collided with a truck. Though no-one else was injured, Patton, sitting in the back, was thrown forward and broke his neck. Many have suggested this was a conspiracy designed to rid Eisenhower of his turbulent general, but the evidence is paltry.

Patton lay in hospital at Heidelberg for 11 days, unable to move as he endured his final battle, struggling to stave off pain, depression and death. Just as he appeared to be stabilising, he took a turn for the worse and on 21 December 1945 the old soldier passed away. For all Patton's crankiness and obduracy, he was a great warrior and, as one of his doctors wrote, he died as he lived: bravely.



Pallbearers carry Patton's casket to its burial plot in Luxembourg. Master Sergeant William George Meeks (front left) was Patton's long-time personal aide

● Takes Messina, Sicily

Though ordered to play second fiddle to the British General Montgomery, Patton races clockwise around the island of Sicily and captures Palermo on 22 July. He then moves swiftly on the vital town of Messina, the gateway to the heel of Italy, and takes it ahead of Montgomery on 16 August. This move is presented with much hilarity in the famous film biopic, *Patton*, released in 1970. Patton's Sicily campaign takes just 38 days and results in 44,000 Axis prisoners. In Sicily, he slaps two enlisted men, news of which breaks in November and nearly cripples his career.

16 August 1943

● Battle of the Bulge

One of Patton's crowning glories during his rampage through Western Europe comes when he is appointed to relieve the 101st Airborne who are pinned down in Belgium following a huge German counter-offensive through the snowy Ardennes. Anticipating the move, Patton swiftly mobilises the Third Army and wheels it through the Ardennes and drives 100 miles to crash 17 divisions into the flank of the German force. This cripples the German offensive and allows Patton to strike at the heart of Germany, though he is prevented from attacking Berlin by Eisenhower who wants to uphold the accord signed at the Yalta Conference.

16 December 1944



● Lands in Morocco

As leader of America's Western Task Force during Operation Torch, Patton lands on the Atlantic seaboard and within a few days takes Casablanca from the Vichy French.

8 November 1942

● Operation Fortitude

With the German High Command fearing Patton above all others, he is made a prominent figure in a deception in which the phantom Army Group Patton encourages Hitler to mass his defences around Calais.

Spring 1944

● Third Army Operational

Patton employs Blitzkrieg style tactics to crash through German defences and speed behind their lines. He is slowed because of supply shortages, but is not stopped until he hits German defences at Nancy and Metz in November.

1 August 1944

● Patton and staff cross the Rhine

Emulating one of his many military idols, the Norman king William the Conqueror, Patton deliberately stubs his toe, falling as he bends to pick up a handful of German soil.

22 March 1945



● Patton dies

After a brave fight, Patton finally succumbs to the broken neck suffered in a car accident 11 days earlier, and he dies in 130th Station Hospital, Heidelberg. His body lies in state at Kronberg Castle.

21 December 1945



General Henry 'Hap' Arnold served as chief of US Army Air Forces from 1942 to 1946



HENRY 'HAP' ARNOLD

AVIATION CHIEF

One of America's first military aviators, Henry 'Hap' Arnold was an acclaimed pilot and led US air forces during World War II

YEARS ACTIVE: 1907-1946

CONFLICTS: WWI, WWII

RANK: GENERAL OF THE ARMY, GENERAL OF THE AIR FORCE

The atmosphere in the courtroom was intense. General William 'Billy' Mitchell was the subject of a court martial for insubordination. Mitchell, the assistant chief of the US Air Service, was outspoken in his advocacy of an air arm separate from the direct control of the US Army. He also forcefully advocated the development of the aircraft as a weapon of war, particularly in strategic and tactical bombing. Although he had many critics within the military establishment, Mitchell had also cultivated the support of some officers.

Among these supporters was Major Henry Harley Arnold. Warned that testifying on behalf of Mitchell might end his career, Arnold was willing to take the chance. Although his views were proven correct soon enough, Mitchell was convicted in December 1925. Then, indeed, Arnold felt the repercussions. He was offered a choice of resignation or a court martial of his own. When he chose the latter, Major General Mason Patrick rethought the implications of another high-profile military court proceeding. Instead, Arnold was assigned to Fort Riley, Kansas, to command the 16th Observation

Squadron, far from the centre of gravity where decisions regarding the future of air power were being made. Arnold was also reprimanded for violating Army regulations and saddled with a fitness report that stung: "In an emergency he is liable to lose his head."

Rather than leaving the military, Arnold stayed on, serving in exile. Remarkably, he emerged as a respected and visionary leader of air forces during a critical period. By the time his career ended, 'Hap' Arnold had presided over an unprecedented development of American air power during World War II. In the twilight of his life he was promoted to five-star General of the Army and subsequently General of the Air Force, the only officer ever to hold the rank in two service branches.

Arnold was already a notable personage prior to his military career taking off. Born in Gladwyne, Pennsylvania, on 25 June 1886, to prosperous physician Herbert Arnold and Anna Louise 'Gangy' Arnold, he completed public schooling and considered entering Bucknell University. However, when his older brother disappointed their father by refusing to take the entrance examination for the US Military Academy at West Point, New York, Henry

stepped up and did. His performance at the academy was mediocre, and he graduated in 1907, commissioned a second lieutenant.

Assigned to the 29th Regiment, he disliked the infantry life and petitioned for a transfer to the Aviation Section of the Army Signal Corps after his first exposure to flight while serving in



Young pilot Henry H. Arnold sits at the controls of an aircraft. Arnold was a pioneer aviator in the US military

★ ★ ★ FEAR OF FLYING

Shaken by numerous aerial mishaps, Henry 'Hap' Arnold once grounded himself and took a leave of absence

Although it may seem strange, General Henry 'Hap' Arnold, who led the US Army Air Forces during World War II, once developed a pronounced fear of flying. As an intrepid aviator, Arnold became a pilot while aviation was in its infancy. At first, he was fearless, setting altitude records and teaching others the skills necessarily to become pilots. However, a fellow aviator, Al Welsh, died in a crash in June 1911, and doubts began to prey on Arnold's psyche.

The developing concern was compounded by his own close calls. In August 1912, while piloting a Burgess Model H seaplane, Arnold was forced to put the plane down in Massachusetts Bay while high winds caused it to pitch violently. As he tried to take off again, the wind howled, a wing tip caught the water, and the plane crashed off the coast near Plymouth. Arnold was shaken and suffered a deep cut on his chin.

Meanwhile, West Point classmate Lewis Rockwell was killed in a crash in September 1912. In October of the same year, Arnold was flying with observer Lieutenant Alfred Sands, during an artillery spotting exercise. As he tried to land, the plane's engine stalled. The ensuing spin nearly cost the men their lives.

The stress had taken its toll. After grounding himself and taking a leave of absence, for which there were no administrative repercussions, Arnold found the fortitude to overcome his fear with short flying stints, 15 to 20 minutes, until he regained confidence and made his first solo flight in four years in November 1916.



As a young man, Henry Arnold was fascinated with flight; later, as an officer, he overcame a fear of flying

the Philippines. On 21 April 1911, he received orders to Dayton, Ohio, for flight instruction. He spent two months in pilot training under Orville and Wilbur Wright, famed for their flight at Kitty Hawk, North Carolina, in 1903. With that, Arnold became an American aviation pioneer, receiving pilot certificate no. 29 from the Fédération Aéronautique Internationale and Military Aviator Certificate No. 2.

While Arnold and colleague 2nd Lieutenant Thomas Milling were detailed to train new pilots at the Aeronautical Division, Signal Corps, in College Park, Maryland, Arnold established a

"WARNED THAT TESTIFYING ON BEHALF OF MITCHELL MIGHT END HIS CAREER, ARNOLD WAS WILLING TO TAKE THE CHANCE"

new altitude record of 990 metres (3,260 feet), and then broke his own record three times. He became the first pilot to carry US mail, first to fly a plane over the US Capitol Building, and first to carry a US Congressman as a passenger. He went on to receive the MacKay Trophy twice, in 1911 and again in 1934, for the most outstanding military flight of the year. As a young pilot, he also featured in two silent films, performing flying sequences. Arnold survived a couple of plane crashes, while others claimed several lives during this period. He took a leave of absence in the autumn of 1912 and returned to duty that December.

During his sabbatical Arnold courted Eleanor 'Bee' Pool, and the two married in September 1913. They eventually had four children. The youngest, a son born in 1921, died two years later. Devastated by the loss, the couple grieved profoundly for a year.

During this time, Arnold worked in the Aeronautical Division of the Office of the Chief Signal Officer in Washington, DC. He returned to the air in the autumn of 1916, and the following spring was ordered to the Panama Canal Zone to find a suitable location for an airfield while putting together the 7th Aero Squadron, his first command. He later occupied several staff positions in aeronautical administration. As the US entered World War I, he hoped for an overseas assignment. When it finally came, the war was nearing its end, and in late October 1918 while aboard a ship he contracted influenza. He recuperated in a hospital in England and reached the Western Front on 11 November, the day the war ended.

Although the dust-up over Billy Mitchell temporarily jeopardised his future, Arnold's stance solidified his character and steadfastness. He worked to rehabilitate his career and succeeded with the help of other officers, particularly Patrick's successor as chief of the Army Air Corps, Major General James E Fechet. He wrote journal articles relating to air power that were well received, and fitness reports praised his service. In the summer of 1928, Fechet recommended to Army Chief of Staff General Charles Summerall that Arnold be sent to the Command and General Staff School at Fort Leavenworth. He graduated in 1929, his career rejuvenated.

Arnold took command of March Field, California, in November 1931, and three years later was named to lead three zones of the Army Air Corps Mail Operation. During this time he led a flight of ten Martin B-10B bombers



General Henry "Hap" Arnold smiles in this morale boosting poster meant to inspire civilians to support the war effort



General Henry 'Hap' Arnold enjoys a conversation in Washington, DC, with British Field Marshal Sir John Dill

on a long round-trip flight from Bolling Field in Washington, DC, to Fairbanks, Alaska, and earned his second MacKay Trophy. By February 1935, he had been promoted two grades, from lieutenant colonel to brigadier general and taken command of the 1st Wing of General Headquarters Air Force at March Field.

At the same time, Arnold gained a reputation as a bomber advocate. He championed the development of the Boeing B-17 Flying Fortress and the Consolidated B-24 Liberator, four-engine, heavy strategic bombers that formed the backbone of the American air



WHAT'S IN A NAME?

Known to history as 'Hap', General Henry H Arnold embraced the nickname later in his military career

General Henry H Arnold's famous nickname, 'Hap', was said to be short for 'Happy'. Some historians believe that it came into common usage during his brief stint of working in silent films, while others suggest his wife, Bee, was responsible for the adorable nickname.

Earlier in his lifetime, though, General Arnold was known by several other names. When he was just a young boy, several family members called him 'Sunny'. As a cadet at the US Military Academy, he was alternately known as 'Benny' or 'Pewt'. As his career developed, he attained high rank and responsibility in the US Army Air Forces. From this point onwards, he was often referred to simply as 'The Chief'.

However, it was most likely a family tragedy that brought the nickname 'Hap' into usage to refer to Arnold. Arnold's mother and father lost their wealth during the bank collapse of 1929 and the ensuing Great Depression. Possibly due to the difficult situation, his mother, nicknamed 'Gangy', died suddenly of a heart attack on 18 January 1931. Arnold was devastated by the loss of his mother, and she had always called him 'Sunny'. Bee, Arnold's wife, felt that continuing the use of that name would bring pangs of sorrow, and she began calling her husband 'Hap'. That name stuck, and from the spring of 1931 to the end of his life, the general signed personal correspondence with his most familiar nickname.



General Henry H Arnold sits at his desk in December 1941. At the height of his career, he was known as 'Hap'

forces that pounded Nazi-occupied Europe during World War II and served with distinction in the Pacific Theater along with the later-developed Boeing B-29 Superfortress. By early 1936, he was a fixture in Washington, DC, and held the position of assistant to the chief of the Air Corps. On 29 September 1938, he was promoted to major general and named commander of the Air Corps, a triumph when considering his near dismissal a decade earlier.

In the summer of 1941, Arnold's title was revised to chief of the Army Air Forces, and as the storm of World War II broke in December with the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor he was promoted to three-star lieutenant

general. Amid a major restructuring of the War Department under Chief of Staff General George C. Marshall, Arnold was named chief of the Army Air Forces. During the war years, he was responsible for all Army Air Forces operations, and the forces under his command grew exponentially from 22,000 personnel and 3,900 planes to 2.5 million in uniform and 75,000 aircraft.

General Arnold made a number of key appointments during the war, including General Carl Spaatz to lead the Eighth Air Force in Europe and General Ira Eaker to command the bomber force, while also placing General Jimmy Doolittle, hero of a surprise raid on the

Japanese capital of Tokyo, in key roles. Arnold demonstrated a rugged constitution and a willingness to relieve or reassign commanders whose performance was inadequate. He supported the costly but effective Allied strategic bombing campaign against Nazi Germany and placed General Curtis LeMay in command of the Twentieth Air Force in the Pacific, where LeMay unleashed a furious bombing campaign that laid waste to Japanese cities, helping to bring the Empire to its knees.

However, health problems plagued Arnold during World War II, including stomach ulcers that were blamed on stress and overwork, as well as four heart attacks between 1943 and 1945. Nevertheless, he made a 35,000-mile tour of installations in North Africa, the Middle East, India, and China, attended pivotal high-level conferences where strategic decisions were made, and was promoted to four-star general. His health deteriorated further in early 1946, when he developed a heart arrhythmia that caused him to suspend a trip to South America and compelled him to retire after nearly 40 years of service. He was promoted to five-star General of the Army rank in March, and a few months later his rank was changed to General of the Air Force, more accurately reflecting his career contribution. A giant of US military aviation, he lived to see the creation of a separate air service, the United States Air Force, in 1947.

Residing at his ranch near Sonoma, California, Arnold spent the majority of his last years writing, an avocation he had pursued all his life. While writing his memoirs, *Global Mission*, Arnold suffered his fifth heart attack in January 1948, which led him to spend three months in the hospital. He died at his home on 15 January 1950, age 63, and was buried at Arlington National Cemetery after sacrificing his health to achieve final victory in World War II.

"HE WROTE JOURNAL ARTICLES RELATING TO AIR POWER THAT WERE WELL RECEIVED, AND FITNESS REPORTS PRAISED HIS SERVICE"



General Henry 'Hap' Arnold is seated at left during a conference of military leaders in 1943



Admiral Raymond A Spruance led US Navy forces to victory at the battles of Midway and the Philippine Sea



RAY SPRUANCE

CRUISERS AND CARRIERS

Commanding US Navy forces during pivotal battles of World War II in the Pacific, Admiral Raymond A Spruance became a true hero

YEARS ACTIVE: 1907-1948
CONFLICTS: WWI, WWII
RANK: ADMIRAL

On the morning of 4 June 1942, the course of World War II in the Pacific hung in the balance. Everywhere, the armed forces of Imperial Japan had been victorious. Through six agonising months, the US Navy, crippled at Pearl Harbor, struggled to hold its own, much less strike an offensive blow upon the enemy.

When Japanese intentions to seize Midway Atoll, roughly 1,300 miles northwest of Hawaii, were revealed in late May, the American response was necessary but tremendously risky. Admiral Chester Nimitz, commander-in-chief of the Pacific Fleet, committed the balance of his available forces, the aircraft carriers Yorktown, Enterprise, and Hornet, and their escorts, to counter an enemy thrust that significantly outnumbered the US contingent with four carriers along with battleships and other escorts. Aside from the obvious peril, Nimitz had another great concern. His most combat-experienced admiral, William F 'Bull' Halsey, was laid up in the hospital in Hawaii with a severe skin ailment.

When Nimitz asked Halsey who should take his place, the latter answered without hesitation, "Ray Spruance". Nimitz was taken

aback. Spruance was a cruiser commander. His escorts had followed Halsey's carriers on hit-and-run raids against Japanese outposts. Halsey had directed the carrier operations, and Spruance had no real experience with flattops. He was not even an aviator. Still, Halsey was adamant, and Nimitz relented.

Soft-spoken yet determined, Spruance was shocked himself when he heard the news. But he proved more than equal to the task that June morning, turning Enterprise and Hornet into the wind and launching the air strike against the Japanese that redressed the balance of power in the Pacific. Aircraft from Yorktown, under Admiral Frank Jack Fletcher, launched planes as well.

Intrepid naval aviators pressed their attacks and sank three Japanese aircraft carriers, eventually accounting for a fourth. Sadly, the Yorktown was lost. But the Battle of Midway was a resounding American victory, the turning point in the Pacific. The once obscure cruiser commander had risen to the occasion.

Raymond A Spruance was born on 3 July 1886, in Baltimore, Maryland, and grew up in Indianapolis, Indiana. He graduated from the US Naval Academy in 1907 and served the

necessary two years at sea before receiving his commission as an ensign. Service aboard the battleships Iowa and Minnesota included the famed world cruise of the Great White Fleet, a show of American military strength during the presidency of Theodore Roosevelt. Spruance took instruction as an electrician being put to sea again, this time serving aboard the battleship Connecticut and the cruiser Cincinnati. Afterwards, he took command of the destroyer USS Bainbridge with the rank of lieutenant (junior grade).

By the spring of 1914, Spruance was serving as assistant to the Inspector of Machinery at the Newport News Shipbuilding and Dry Dock Company in Virginia. The battleship Pennsylvania was completed within the next three years, and he was heavily involved in its fitting. Spruance then served aboard the Pennsylvania during World War I before returning to the US in the autumn of 1917 as an engineer officer at the New York Navy Yard. He also served in London and Edinburgh, Scotland, as a fire control officer.

When the Great War ended, Spruance worked repatriating American soldiers who had fought in Europe and then held a series of



Admiral Raymond Spruance strides forward to inspect Marines aboard the aircraft carrier USS Bennington in 1946



MANNING THE HOSE

Admiral Raymond A Spruance set an example of courage when his ship was hit during the Pacific War

For much of World War II in the Pacific, Admiral Raymond A Spruance directed the operations of Task Force 58 from the bridge of the heavy cruiser Indianapolis, which later came to grief after being torpedoed by a Japanese submarine. Off Okinawa, Indianapolis was one of a group of American warships that was assailed by a cloud of kamikazes. Indianapolis was struck and as such, was forced out of action.

Spruance transferred his flag to the battleship New Mexico, an elderly vessel of the Okinawa bombardment force that had been commissioned in May 1918, before the end of World War I. During operations on 12 May 1945, New Mexico approached her berth at the Hagushi Bay anchorage. A pair of kamikazes suddenly appeared just as the sun was setting. One of these crashed into the old battleship, while the other missed a direct hit but managed to loose its bomb accurately. 54 sailors were killed and more than 100 were wounded in the explosions and subsequent fires that raged.

In the midst of the confusion, members of Admiral Spruance's staff searched for him. They eventually found the 58-year-old officer working with a crew that was throwing water from a heavy fire hose on the flames that had erupted amidships. In a moment of heroism, the admiral had again displayed his true character, a willingness to risk his own life in an effort to save his ship and the lives of others. It was a sight and an example of Spruance's character that those who witnessed never forgot.



Aboard the battleship USS New Mexico Admiral Ray Spruance's assisted in putting out fires caused by a Kamikaze pilots

engineering and shipboard posts in destroyers. By the end of the 1920s, he had completed the senior course at the Naval War College and worked in naval intelligence prior to becoming executive officer of the battleship Mississippi. He served three years as an instructor at the Naval War College in the mid-1930s and returned to the Mississippi as commanding officer, reaching flag rank as a rear admiral in December 1939. After serving as commander of the Tenth Naval District in San Juan, Puerto Rico, and commander of the Caribbean Sea Frontier from February 1940 until June 1941, he was given command of Cruiser Division Five the following September, weeks before the attack on Pearl Harbor brought the United States into World War II.

During the opening weeks of the war, Spruance flew his flag from the heavy cruiser Northampton, ranging from the Gilbert and Marshall Islands to Wake Island and Marcus Island, while escorting Halsey, aboard Enterprise, during carrier air raids against enemy installations that boosted American morale in the dark days of the conflict. Spruance also commanded the cruiser escort with the carriers Hornet and Enterprise during the famed Doolittle Raid on Tokyo in April 1942.

Spruance relied on Halsey's experienced staff during operations in the Battle of Midway

and established himself as a cool, thoughtful commander. After his triumph, he became an aide to Nimitz, Commander-in-Chief of Pacific Ocean Areas, and a promotion to Deputy Commander followed in September 1942. In August 1943, he was named commander of the Central Pacific Force, and in November led Operation Galvanic, the combined Navy, Marine Corps and Army offensive that captured Tarawa and Makin Atolls in the first American amphibious landings against contested beaches during the war. He directed operations through the Gilbert and Marshall Islands along with devastating air strikes against the Japanese logistical base at Truk in the Carolines. Meanwhile, Halsey regained his health and assumed command during the prolonged but successful battles at Guadalcanal in the Solomon Islands.

The Central Pacific Force was redesignated as the Fifth Fleet on 29 April 1944, and Admiral Nimitz implemented an effective method of operations. American naval power had grown significantly as industry produced ships and planes for the war effort. Nimitz gave Spruance command of the Fifth Fleet and its combat element, Task Force 58. Command alternated with Halsey, with the forces designated Third Fleet and Task Force 38 under his control. While one admiral was at sea fighting the



In this late 1945 photo, Admiral Raymond Spruance talks with his son, Commander Edward Spruance

"THROUGH SIX AGONISING MONTHS, THE US NAVY, CRIPPLED AT PEARL HARBOR, HAD STRUGGLED TO HOLD ITS OWN"



Admiral Halsey recommended Ray Spruance for aircraft carrier command prior to the Battle of Midway

“AMERICAN NAVAL POWER HAD GROWN SIGNIFICANTLY AS INDUSTRY PRODUCED SHIPS AND PLANES FOR THE WAR EFFORT”

Japanese, the other was planning his own next offensive operation.

In mid-1944, American attention turned to the Mariana Islands, where Spruance held overall command during landings on Saipan, Guam, and Tinian. At the same time, Task Force 58 was responsible for protecting the landings against Japanese interference and with engaging the enemy fleet if the opportunity presented itself. Spruance accomplished both as his ships and planes dealt a devastating blow to Japanese naval power during the Battle of the Philippine Sea, sinking three enemy aircraft carriers and destroying roughly 600 Japanese aircraft. Although he was criticised for opting against a vigorous pursuit of the retreating Japanese naval force, Spruance accomplished his primary mission of protecting the landing beaches.

Admiral Ernest J King defended Spruance's assessment of the situation at Philippine Sea and wrote, “Spruance, you did a damn fine job there. No matter what other people tell you, your decision was correct.”

During the last bloody months of World War II, Admiral Spruance led the Fifth Fleet during the invasions of Iwo Jima and Okinawa. Iwo Jima was taken after a 34-day struggle that cost the Marines greatly, with 6,800 killed and more than 19,000 wounded, while the Japanese were virtually wiped out with about 20,000 casualties and only 216 taken prisoner.

At Okinawa, an invasion that occurred on 1 April 1945, an odd coincidence of Easter Sunday and April Fool's Day, the Fifth Fleet

stood offshore and absorbed the brunt of ferocious attacks from waves of Japanese kamikaze suicide planes. The island was captured after nearly three months of combat with more than 12,000 killed and 37,000 wounded. Over 4,000 of the dead were lost aboard naval vessels. The Japanese garrison of over 100,000 was devastated, and only 11,000 were taken prisoner.

After the Japanese surrender in September 1945, Spruance succeeded Nimitz as commander of the US Pacific Fleet and then served as President of the Naval War College in Newport, Rhode Island. He retired from the Navy on 1 July 1948, with the rank of four-star admiral. Although he appeared an obvious choice for elevation to five-star fleet admiral, as his contemporary Halsey had been, Spruance's promotion was blocked by Congressman Carl Vinson in a clear case of partisan politics. In response, Congress approved an unprecedented tribute to Spruance, specifying that the admiral should receive full admiral's pay until his death.

President Harry S Truman appointed Spruance Ambassador to the Philippines, and he held that post from 1952 to 1955. He retired to Pebble Beach, California, and lived quietly until his death at the age of 83 on 13 December 1969. Although five-star rank was denied to him, Ray Spruance's actual command accomplishments eclipsed any named honour that he received. His contribution to the US victory in the Pacific was, without question, immeasurable.



THE SOFT-SPOKEN ADMIRAL

Raymond A Spruance lived quietly in retirement, never seeking the limelight although his achievements in the US Navy during World War II were tremendous

After retirement, Admiral Ray Spruance rarely talked about himself or his time in the Navy. He seldom drank and never smoked, and even in his later years was fond of taking long walks – eight or more miles in a single day. He adored his pet schnauzer. Neighbours recall seeing the admiral clad in old clothes working away in the garden that he took pride in showing off.

While he was a legend in the Navy, one of his greatest gifts was an ability to get along with others, particularly difficult people. Admiral Ernest J King, Chief of Naval Operations, praised Spruance, although King was often short-tempered and abrasive. Spruance was friendly with Admiral William F 'Bull' Halsey even though their temperaments were quite different and they might easily have developed a rivalry. Admiral Richmond Kelly Turner, notorious for a caustic personality, counted Spruance as a friend. Admiral Chester Nimitz, his senior in the Pacific, was also close to Spruance. At Nimitz's request, he, Spruance, Turner, Admiral Charles Lockwood, and their spouses are buried near one another in San Francisco.



Admiral Raymond A Spruance talks with Admiral Chester Nimitz and other officers aboard a Naval ship



US Navy dive bombers descend on Japanese warships during the Battle of Midway. Admiral Ray Spruance performed superbly in command



Dwight Eisenhower rose to the rank of General of the Army and served two terms as President of the United States



DWIGHT EISENHOWER

SOLDIER AND STATESMAN

The General who led the Western Allies to victory in WWII also served as the 34th President of the United States

YEARS ACTIVE: 1915-1969
CONFLICTS: WWI, WWII
RANK: GENERAL OF THE ARMY

The rain battered the rooftop and the wind howled at Allied headquarters at Southwick House north of Portsmouth, England, in the predawn hours of 5 June 1944. An army of 150,000 men along with thousands of ships and aircraft were poised to unleash Operation Overlord, the Allied invasion of Normandy, D-Day, the long-awaited assault on Hitler's Fortress Europe expected to hasten total victory in World War II.

Years of planning and logistical preparation had brought the Allied high command to this point, but the weather conditions were playing havoc with the operation. Overlord had already been postponed 24 hours. Another postponement was virtually unthinkable with soldiers embarked aboard ships, the invasion fleet already in position and the probability of maintaining secrecy ebbing away with each passing minute. But high winds and rough surf might swamp landing craft, blow paratroopers off course, and ground supporting aircraft.

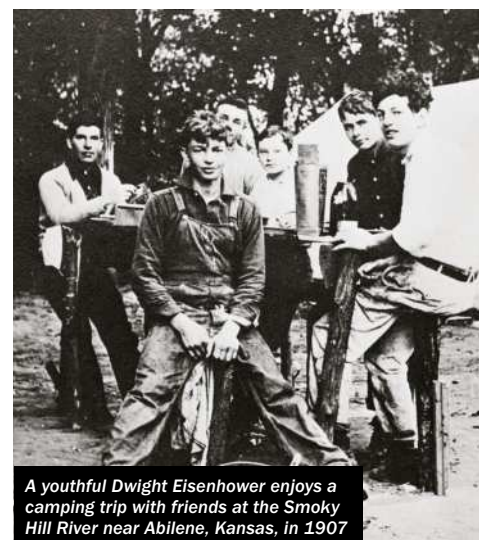
The atmosphere was tense at Southwick House as the 4.15am meeting convened with the top Allied commanders present. Chief meteorologist RAF Group Captain James

Stagg delivered a weather report that offered a glimmer of hope, a window of improved conditions that might allow Overlord to get underway. The decision to postpone or unleash the invasion was fraught with peril either way. And it rested with one man, General Dwight D Eisenhower, Supreme Commander Allied Expeditionary Force. The veteran commander who had overseen Operation Torch in North Africa two years earlier scanned the room, seeking perspective from his lieutenants.

General Bernard Montgomery, commander of Allied ground forces, chirped, "I would say go!" Others voiced their opinions and concerns. Eisenhower thought a moment, paced the floor with hands behind his back, turned to the gathering and declared, "Okay, we'll go!"

Within minutes, word flashed and commanders set the invasion of Normandy in motion. Agonising hours followed, but the successful lodgement achieved on D-Day served as a springboard for the Western Allied armies to advance across France and into the German Reich, link up with the Soviet Red Army, and defeat the Nazi regime, ending World War II just 11 months after the dramatic undertaking that had begun with such grave concern.

Dwight David Eisenhower had never fired a shot in combat. In fact, a military career had seemed unlikely for the boy who was born on 14 October 1890 in Denison, Texas, the third of seven sons, to David and Ida Stover Eisenhower. The family subsequently moved to Kansas, and Dwight grew up in the Midwestern cow town of Abilene, playing football and generally excelling in sports. The Eisenhower



A youthful Dwight Eisenhower enjoys a camping trip with friends at the Smoky Hill River near Abilene, Kansas, in 1907



CLASS THE STARS FELL ON

The most storied class of the US Military Academy at West Point, the Class of 1915 excelled in war and peace

Dwight Eisenhower graduated roughly in the middle of the West Point Class of 1915, but went on to become the most famous member of a group of officers that reached general rank in such astounding numbers that it is known as the "Class the Stars Fell On." In addition to Eisenhower, 58 of 164 classmates achieved the rank of brigadier general or higher during their careers.

Along with Eisenhower, Omar Bradley also reached five-star General of the Army rank. James Van Fleet and Joseph McNarney, reached full general with four stars. Van Fleet commanded the 8th Infantry Regiment in Normandy, rose to division, corps, and army command, and led the Eighth Army during the Korean War and suppressed a Communist insurrection in Greece. McNarney was instrumental in the reorganisation of the War

Department in 1942 and represented Chief of Staff George C Marshall on the Roberts Commission investigating the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor. Seven men – Henry Aurand, Hubert Harmon, Stafford Leroy Irwin, Thomas B Larkin, John W Leonard, George E Stratemeyer, and Joseph Swing – achieved three-star lieutenant general rank.

They held key positions, some in combat, during World War II, and Harmon is remembered as the father of the impressive US Air Force Academy in Colorado. Throughout his military and political career, Eisenhower availed himself of the talents of his West Point classmates. His greatest civil-engineering achievement was the establishment of the interstate highway system, and he entrusted its development to former classmate and major general John Stuart Bragdon.



The West Point Class of 1915 gathers on the steps of the Lutheran Church in Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, days before graduation

"EISENHOWER STILL WONDERED WHETHER HIS MILITARY CAREER WOULD ADVANCE MUCH FURTHER IN PEACETIME"

boys wanted to go to college, and Dwight made a pact with his brother Edgar; one would work and send money to the other at school, and then the roles would be reversed. Dwight worked for two years at the Belle Springs Creamery, while Edgar attended the University of Michigan. During this time, a friend, Edward 'Swede' Hazlett, mentioned applying for the US Naval Academy at Annapolis. If accepted, the cost of education would be paid by the government, and, of course there was the appeal of athletics.

Dwight wanted to play football, and the free education was his ticket out of the creamery. He decided to apply for admission and took the

competitive entrance examination at Jefferson Barracks, Missouri. When he learned that he was too old to attend Annapolis, he secured an appointment to the US Military Academy at West Point in 1911, graduating 61st among 164 cadets in the fabled class of 1915. The following year, he married socialite Mamie Doud of Denver, Colorado. They had two sons. Doud Dwight 'Icky' Eisenhower was born in 1917 and died tragically of scarlet fever at the age of three. John was born in 1922.

An obscure lieutenant colonel at the beginning of World War II, Eisenhower had proven himself a superb organiser and trainer of soldiers, and when the conflict erupted



On their wedding day in the summer of 1916, Dwight and Mamie Eisenhower posed for this intimate portrait

he rose to supreme command with meteoric velocity. Due in part to those valuable administrative skills, he did not see combat or serve abroad during World War I, which he deeply regretted. Instead, he held a series of posts around the United States and became an instructor of early armoured units at Camp Colt in Gettysburg, Pennsylvania. Although he received temporary promotion during the Great War, when it was over he reverted to his permanent rank of captain. Shortly thereafter, he was elevated to major and held that rank for an interminably long 16 years.

During the interwar years, he served in Europe, the Panama Canal Zone, Washington, DC, and the Philippines. Two of his superiors, Generals Fox Conner and Douglas MacArthur, shaped his command perspective. He attended the Command and General Staff College at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, ranking first in a class of 245 officers. He then commanded an infantry battalion based at Fort Benning, Georgia. During difficult dealings with the Bonus Marchers, World War I veterans seeking payments for their service, Eisenhower warned MacArthur to distance himself from the violence and fumed when his boss did not heed his counsel, instead venturing to Anacostia Flats near Washington, DC, in full uniform and sparking a public relations disaster in the process. He later grew disdainful of MacArthur for his bombast and egotistical behaviour and never forgot being blamed for a spending fiasco involving a parade of Filipino military assets at a time when the budget for such extravagances was non-existent.

When he returned to the United States from the Philippines in late-1939, Eisenhower commanded a battalion of the 15th Infantry Regiment at Fort Lewis, Washington, and then



Dwight Eisenhower stands at far left in this portrait with his family taken in Abilene. He was the third of seven sons

was posted to Third Army as chief of staff to General Walter Krueger. He posed for a photo with Krueger and his staff and remained such an unknown that he was identified as "Lieutenant Colonel DD Ersenbeing".

After the expansive Louisiana Maneuvers concluded in 1941, he was promoted to brigadier general after 26 years in the army.

Although he had subsequently reached general rank, Eisenhower still wondered whether his military career would advance much further in peacetime. However, he had learned to control a fiery temper, was possessed of an affability that few others could match, and flashed the warmest of grins when pleased. He had gained many friends in the service. After the United States were plunged into World War II, Army Chief of Staff General George C Marshall was in the midst of a reorganisation of the War Department. Marshall asked another rising star in the army, General Mark Clark, for a list of ten names whom he considered top candidates to head the new War Plans Division. Clark, a 1917 West Point graduate, was a longtime friend of Eisenhower.

Clark responded to Marshall's query with a comment that energised Eisenhower's career. "Ike Eisenhower. If you have to have ten names, I'll just put nine ditto marks below."

Summoned again to Washington, DC, Eisenhower rapidly became a core member of Marshall's trusted cadre that planned American strategy during the dark early days of World War II. Eisenhower's frank initial assessment of the situation in the Pacific immediately gained Marshall's validation and approval. In the spring of 1942, he was ordered to Britain to assess preparations for an eventual Allied return to the European continent. He came back with a candid but disparaging report and then found himself in the driver's seat. Within a month he was on his way again to London as commander

in the European Theater of Operations with the rank of lieutenant general.

Eisenhower's effective date as commander of US Forces, European Theater of Operations was 25 June 1942. Less than a year earlier, he had been an unknown. At dinner on the evening of his appointment, Eisenhower told Mamie that he would be returning to London and that this time it would probably be for the duration of the war. She asked, "What post are you going to have?" He grinned and responded, "I'm going to command the whole shebang."

Eisenhower commanded the first foray of American troops against the Nazi Wehrmacht in World War II, taking on the additional role of commander of Allied forces in the Mediterranean. On 8 November 1942, Allied troops landed on the shores of North Africa in Operation Torch. The Americans suffered

mightily during their early battles with the Germans; however, they learned quickly despite some rivalry with their British allies, who were at first sceptical of the Americans' fighting ability. In North Africa, Eisenhower got his first taste of coalition warfare, and he later became a master of the art.

Six months after the Torch landings, American and British forces advancing from the west had met General Montgomery's Eighth Army pushing from the east, squeezing the German Panzerarmee Afrika in a vise in the Tunisian desert. The Allied victory in North Africa was a disaster for the Germans and a significant blow to their military capabilities. Eisenhower honed command skills and made difficult decisions in the field, coming to depend on his West Point classmate, General Omar Bradley, and his old friend from their early armoured days, General George S Patton Jr.

In July 1943, the Allied offensive in the Mediterranean continued with Operation Husky, the invasion of Sicily. Eisenhower was elevated to command all Allied forces in the theatre, including the British Eighth Army. Even before fighting began on the island, the towering egos of Patton and Montgomery clashed. Eisenhower often found himself working to maintain their focus on the enemy rather than one-upping the other in the attainment of newspaper headlines and fame. When Patton lost his temper during two incidents and slapped soldiers while visiting field hospitals in Sicily after the invasion, Eisenhower was livid. However, he could not afford to lose the services of the fighting general, and though Patton was sidelined, he reemerged later as a hero during the fighting in Western Europe.



During his plebe year at the US Military Academy, Dwight Eisenhower strikes a pose in his cadet uniform



This photograph of Dwight Eisenhower was taken in 1918 while he was hoping for an assignment overseas during World War I



General Dwight Eisenhower talks with paratroopers of the American 101st Airborne Division prior to their departure on D-Day

Eisenhower wrote a terse letter to his old friend, which read in part: "I clearly understand that firm and drastic measures were at times necessary in order to secure the desired objectives. But this does not excuse brutality, abuse of the sick, nor exhibition of uncontrollable temper in front of subordinates. I must so seriously question your good judgment and your self-discipline as to raise serious doubt in my mind as to your future usefulness."

Sicily was secured, and on 3 September 1943, Allied troops invaded the mainland of Italy. Operation Avalanche signalled the beginning of a long, arduous campaign, and the initial landings, led by his friend Clark at the head of Fifth Army at Salerno, while Montgomery and British forces landed at Taranto and Calabria, were nearly pushed back into the sea by strong and determined enemy resistance. When World War II ended nearly

two years later, fighting was still taking place in northern Italy.

Meanwhile, President Franklin D Roosevelt had wrestled with the decision of who would lead the Allied forces in their return to the European continent. He knew General Marshall coveted the post but genuinely needed his chief of staff's presence in Washington, DC. That left Eisenhower as the man of the hour, and in December 1943, he was told he would serve as Supreme Commander Allied Expeditionary Force. Despite the anxious moments on D-Day, when Allied troops landed at Gold, Juno, Sword, Utah, and Omaha beaches in Normandy, a foothold was established, and Eisenhower then faced the great task of advancing across the continent and into Germany.

The Normandy campaign was a bloody affair as American, British, Canadian, and French troops slugged it out with tenacious German defenders. The hedgerow country, or bocage, presented a massive challenge. These ancient mounds of dirt, sod, and even large trees marked the boundaries of Norman farmers' fields, and the Germans vigorously defended every country lane and corner. Although Montgomery failed to take the vital communications and transport center of Caen on D-Day he drew substantial German troops and tanks to him and facilitated Bradley's breakout into open country with Operation Cobra on 25 July 1944. Saturation bombing of a portion of the German front line was followed



Dwight Eisenhower stands in front of a French-built Renault tank during his days training at Camp Meade, Maryland

with a rush through the resulting gap. The Third US Army was activated with Patton in command and executed a dazzling dash across France. Patton and Montgomery continued to clash, and Patton chafed when fuel reserves were diverted northward to his rival, halting the progress. Thousands of enemy troops were killed or captured during the great encirclement of German forces at Falaise, although the timetable of the Allied advance allowed may others to escape the trap.

With Caen and environs in hand, Montgomery also advanced toward the great natural barrier of the Rhine River on the German frontier. Throughout the campaign in Europe, Eisenhower prosecuted a broad front strategy, pressing the enemy in multiple locations at the same time. Only once did he deviate from that precept on a large scale. In September 1944,

culminating with a drive across the River Meuse and the capture of the key deepwater port of Antwerp, Belgium. The Allied armies would be divided, their supply lines crippled. They might even abandon their Soviet co-belligerents and negotiate a separate peace. The storm broke in mid-December, resulting in the Battle of the Bulge. Although it was a long shot to begin with, the Allied position was in peril until the shoulders of the great bulge were stabilized with Patton's Third Army executing a brilliant drive to the north and relieving the encircled garrison at the crossroads village of Bastogne, Belgium. At the same time, Montgomery took temporary command of American forces north of the bulge and attacked. Eisenhower was promoted to General of the Army on the 20th, and by January the threat had passed. In the wake of the Battle of the Bulge there was

“EISENHOWER MADE THE DECISION TO ALLOW THE RED ARMY TO FIGHT, BLEED AND DIE IN THE CAPTURE OF THE GERMAN CAPITAL”

with the urging and planning of Montgomery, Eisenhower unleashed Operation Market-Garden, a combined airborne and ground thrust across the Neder Rhine into Holland designed to capture the Ruhr, the industrial heart of Germany, with hopes of ending the war by Christmas. Market-Garden was a valiant effort but ended in failure and the destruction of the British 1st Airborne Division at Arnhem.

The winter of 1944 presented another stern challenge to the drive into Nazi Germany. Allied forces were strung across a lengthy front in France, Germany, and Luxembourg, and Adolf Hitler conceived his last desperate gamble in the West, a heavy armoured thrust through the thinly held American line in the Ardennes Forest



General of the Army Dwight Eisenhower flashes his trademark grin in this portrait taken in the late-1950s



A LET-DOWN IN AFRICA

After a desert debacle, General Eisenhower hoped a friend would take field command but was disappointed with the response

The US Army's II Corps was mauled in a fight with the Germans, under the command of legendary General Erwin Rommel, at Kasserine Pass in February 1943, and shortly thereafter, General Dwight Eisenhower removed its commander, General Lloyd Fredendall. In his stead, Eisenhower hoped his trusted friend, hand-picked to accompany him to Britain and then to North Africa, would accept the combat command.

Clark, however, surprised Eisenhower and declined, stating he believed it was a demotion from his position as deputy theatre commander. Eisenhower never forgot his disappointment as Clark appeared to care more about his own career than

the mission at hand. In his last days, bedridden at Walter Reed Army Hospital, Eisenhower visited with Clark many times, and the latter remembered that his commander's favourite topic was their days at West Point. Perhaps this was because the incident in North Africa was too painful a memory. Clark again chose fame during the Italian campaign when he forfeited an opportunity to bag thousands of German troops in favour of capturing the city of Rome.

After Clark refused command of II Corps, Eisenhower turned to another old friend, George S Patton Junior, who accepted the role and went on to become the stuff of legend.



British General Bernard Montgomery listens as General Dwight Eisenhower gestures during discussions related to the D-Day invasion



General Mark Clark (left) and General Dwight Eisenhower remained friends despite Clark's refusal of command in North Africa



Famed General George S Patton, Jr sits to the right of General Dwight Eisenhower during a moment of leisure

plenty of criticism regarding preparedness and response, but this soon faded in the flood of victories that followed.

In the spring of 1945, Allied forces vaulted the Rhine and struck deep into Germany. In April, American and Soviet soldiers linked up at the town of Torgau on the Elbe River, and the Third Reich was split in two. During the closing days of the war in Europe, Eisenhower made the decision to allow the Red Army to fight, bleed and die in the capture of the German capital of Berlin. Although subordinates were irked at the decision, a conversation with Bradley had convinced him his tactic was correct. Indeed, during the post-war division of occupied Germany the Western Allies were

given their own sectors in Berlin. With victory in Europe secured in May 1945, Eisenhower was hailed a hero. Historians agree that few men could have maintained the tenuous relations between the Allies and successfully waged a massive military campaign with more effectiveness than Eisenhower.

The general served as military governor of the American occupation zone in Germany, was lauded with a ticker tape parade in New York, and succeeded Marshall as Chief of Staff of the Army. His popularity soared, and both the Republican and Democratic parties sought his affiliation and assent to run for President of the United States in 1948. However, he declined, stating he was a lifelong soldier. He accepted

the presidency of Columbia University, served as an advisor to Secretary of Defense James Forrestal, became heavily involved in the formation of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, and then served as the first supreme military commander of NATO (North Atlantic Treaty Organization).

In 1951, the Republican establishment succeeded in coaxing Eisenhower to run for president. He was elected by a landslide and then gained a second term by a wide margin of the electorate, occupying the White House from 1953 to 1961, as “I Like Ike” became a familiar slogan. During his presidency, Eisenhower pursued a moderately conservative policy line. He worked to suspend hostilities on the Korean Peninsula, which was accomplished in July 1953, supported the French effort against the communist Viet Minh in Indochina, and was chief executive during the early days of the Cold War. As the Soviet Union developed nuclear weapons the world became a much more dangerous place in which to live. While the USA generally enjoyed economic prosperity, relations with the Soviets were often tense. One of the most difficult periods for Eisenhower’s administration was the U-2 Incident of 1960, when the Soviets shot down an American spy plane and the president denied the existence of such flights over Soviet territory. When Soviet Premier Nikita Krushchev produced wreckage of the plane, and the pilot, Francis Gary Powers, was convicted of espionage in a show trial, the president was embarrassed on the world stage.

Eisenhower followed in step with existing social programs, and though he has been criticised for a lack of enthusiasm for the civil rights movement, he did sign the Civil Rights Act of 1957 and sent federal troops to ensure

TIMELINE

Born in the heartland
Dwight Eisenhower is born the third of seven sons to David and Ida Stover Eisenhower in the small town of Denison, Texas. Two years later the family moves to Abilene, Kansas, where he enjoys tales of the American West and excels in athletics as a part of a large family with devout Christian principles. Stories of his willingness to champion the cause of the weak follow for the rest of his life, and he enjoys outdoor activities as well. He graduates from Abilene High School in 1909 and goes to work with his father and uncle in the Belle Springs Creamery.
14 October 1890



Birth of Icky
Although disappointed that requests for overseas duty during WWI are denied, Eisenhower is buoyed by the birth of his son Icky. Sadly, Icky dies of scarlet fever at aged three.
24 September 1917



To the military academy
Eisenhower performs well on an academy entrance examination, but is too old to attend the Naval Academy at Annapolis. Instead, he receives an appointment to the US Military Academy at West Point.
January 1911

Receiving a commission
Eisenhower graduates 61st, roughly in the middle of a class of 164 cadets, at West Point and is commissioned a second lieutenant in the Army. His subsequent career spans five eventful decades.
12 June 1915

Marriage to Mamie
Second Lieutenant Eisenhower marries Mamie Doud, the daughter of a wealthy Denver businessman. The two had met while Eisenhower was stationed in San Antonio, Texas, near the Doud winter home.
1 July 1916

The transcontinental convoy
Eisenhower embarks on a gruelling cross-country convoy as US Army personnel drive 3,000 miles from Washington, DC, to Oakland, California, to assess military transport capabilities. Breakdowns and injuries are numerous.
7 July 1919



Dwight Eisenhower is sworn in as the 34th President of the United States in January 1953. The general served two terms

the racial integration of Central High School in Little Rock, Arkansas, a watershed moment in race relations.

For most of his life, Eisenhower was a heavy smoker, and during the 1950s and 60s a series of heart attacks caused his health to deteriorate. In 1957 he suffered a mild stroke, and for years he dealt with intestinal problems, undergoing multiple surgical procedures. Once his political career ended, he retired to the home he and Mamie had bought in Gettysburg in 1950 but had little leisure time. He took up painting and remained an avid golfer.

Eisenhower spent the last year of his life in a suite at Walter Reed Army Hospital, where he died of congestive heart failure at the age of 78 on 28 March 1969, remembered as the most celebrated and revered American military officer of the 20th century.



Supreme Allied commander in Europe, General Dwight Eisenhower sits at center with his immediate subordinate commanders for D-Day

● Command in Europe

Named commander of US forces in Europe, Eisenhower prepares for the first offensive operations of the war involving American troops. Rather than Western Europe, the deployment is set for North Africa.

25 June 1942

● Operation Torch

Eisenhower commands Allied forces during Operation Torch, the landings on the coast of Africa that ultimately contribute to the defeat of the German and Italian enemy on that continent.

8 November 1942

● Supreme sommander

Named supreme commander of the Allied forces in Europe, Eisenhower and his lieutenants take on the awesome task of preparing men and machines of war for the D-Day invasion.

December 1943

● Victory communicated

After ceremonies in a schoolhouse in Reims, France, conclude, Eisenhower issues a communiqué announcing that the mission of the Allied Expeditionary Force in Europe has been completed, ending World War II in Europe.

8 May 1945

● NATO command

Eisenhower is named commander of NATO military forces After World War II while also serving as president of Columbia University and working with the Joint Chiefs of Staff after World War II.

December 1950

● Remembrance

After month in hospital, Eisenhower succumbs to congestive heart failure. He lies in state in the US Capitol and is interred at the Eisenhower Presidential Library and Boyhood Home in Kansas.

28 March 1969

● Reign of MacArthur

Eisenhower returns from the Philippines to the United States after four years on the staff of General Douglas MacArthur. Although he learns a great deal regarding organisation and relations with dignitaries, he becomes disenchanted with MacArthur and makes repeated requests for transfer. Despite their chilling relationship, MacArthur writes a glowing recommendation of his former aide. Eisenhower holds numerous posts in the US prior to World War II and is recognised for his administrative ability after the 1941 Louisiana Maneuvers. Despite his successes, he serves as a lowly lieutenant colonel on the staff of Third Army as war clouds gather.

December 1939

● Operation Overlord

Eisenhower commands the awesome Allied air, sea, and land contingent that assaults Hitler's Fortress Europe and begins the campaign on the continent that ends with the defeat of the Nazis.

6 June 1944

● Ascent to the presidency

Republican Eisenhower becomes the 34th President of the United States after defeating Democratic challenger Adlai Stevenson in a landslide, 442 electoral votes to 89. He runs successfully for reelection four years later, again defeating Stevenson by a wide margin. He completes eight years in office in January 1961 but continues to advise future presidents John F Kennedy and Lyndon B Johnson. His own presidency is considered among the most successful in US history, although he faces the challenges of the Cold War, communist aggression in Korea and Indochina, and the growing issues of the Civil Rights movement.

4 November 1952



General Omar Bradley
photographed during his
military career



OMAR BRADLEY

THE GI'S GENERAL

A superb administrator and tactical field commander, General Bradley gained a reputation of genuine concern for his troops during World War II

YEARS ACTIVE: 1915-1981
CONFLICTS: WWI, WWII
RANK: GENERAL OF THE ARMY

On the morning of 6 June 1944, the situation was in doubt at Omaha Beach. Allied soldiers had stormed ashore on the beaches of Normandy in the opening hours of Operation Overlord, the pivotal campaign of World War II in the west that would eventually topple Adolf Hitler and Nazi Germany.

Once ashore, the Americans at Omaha were to penetrate the defences of the formidable Atlantic Wall and thrust inland, linking up with other troops landing on invasion beaches and airborne elements that held key roads and towns to facilitate the war-winning offensive. But now, at the height of the fighting on D-Day, they were faced with the ominous prospect of being pushed into the sea at Omaha Beach.

General Omar Nelson Bradley, commander of US ground forces on D-Day, watched the events unfold offshore from the USS Augusta with growing concern. The decision whether to evacuate those men foundering ashore at Omaha and divert reinforcements to other beaches or continue with the operation and fight it out rested with Bradley.

"Omaha Beach... was a nightmare," Bradley later wrote. "Even now it brings pain to recall

what happened there on June 6 1944... Omaha Beach remained a bloodbath for too long. Six hours after the landings we held only ten yards of beach... The whole of D-Day was for me a time of grave personal anxiety and frustration... I gained the impression that our forces had suffered an irreversible catastrophe, that there was little hope we could force the beach... I agonized over the withdrawal decision, praying that our men could hang on." He stayed with the original plan, and ultimately the Americans at Omaha gained a satisfactory lodgement.

Nearly 30 years of service in the US Army had brought Bradley to his crossroads of command, and his steadfastness on D-Day was perhaps the greatest moment of his Army career. Bradley was a member of the legendary class of 1915 at the US Military Academy in West Point, New York. He graduated 44th in a class of 164, and 59 of its members achieved the rank of general or higher during their careers, more than any other class in the history of the Academy. The group was later nicknamed "the class the stars fell on". Among Bradley's classmates was the celebrated General Dwight D Eisenhower, Supreme Allied Commander in Europe.

The last officer to hold five-star General of the Army rank, Bradley was born in Clark, Missouri, on 12 February 1893. The son of a schoolteacher and administrator, he learned how to handle a rifle at a young age as his father taught him to hunt. Bradley was 15 when his father died, after which time his mother struggled financially, losing a home to foreclosure. Bradley was an outstanding student and athlete, graduating from high school in nearby Moberly, Missouri, in 1910. While working for the Wabash Railroad, he aspired to attend the University of Missouri, but the cost was a significant obstacle.

Bradley's life changed when his Sunday school teacher mentioned that those who attended West Point had their education paid for by the US government. He was encouraged to take a competitive entrance examination at Jefferson Barracks in St. Louis and won an appointment to the academy when another applicant failed the rigorous battery. For Bradley, the exam was also a challenge. During the mathematics section he was stumped and rose to turn in a nearly blank paper. The attending soldier was engrossed in a book, and Bradley returned to his seat rather than disturb



CHANCE ENCOUNTER WITH BRADLEY

During his later years, Omar Bradley was revered among the veterans of World War II, who recalled his goodwill rather than displaying an arrogant posture

Although there were some contemporaries who considered the idea that General Omar Bradley was the "GI's General" to be a press-contrived myth, there were instances that demonstrated a real concern for the common soldier and their ordeal in wartime. When Bradley died, his funeral process wound to his final resting place at Arlington National Cemetery, and a military band played the old barracks tune, *Dog Face Soldier*. The general, no doubt, would have appreciated the sentiment and the post-war impression that he had made on those who served in the ranks during World War II.

Ellis O Butler, a veteran of the war in Europe, recalled a chance encounter with General Bradley in Boston. "We had our fill of what we considered to be arrogant, overbearing high brass, eager to impress us with their own self-importance. But Omar Bradley was different – plain, soft-spoken, considerate, yet a brilliant strategist, and a leader we respected and admired. The combat GIs considered him one of us," he remembered.

"Suddenly I looked up and saw coming down the avenue towards me, an Army passenger car... And riding in the car, to my surprise and delight – General Omar Bradley! He was accompanied by several bemedalled aides and seemed as bored and out of place as I myself was feeling. Without thinking, I grinned and waved to him, forgetting completely that what I should be doing was saluting him. When General Bradley saw me... he suddenly grinned, too, pointed to my Spearhead Armored Division Patch, and waved back to me!"



General Omar Bradley, in combat uniform, displays a slight smile in this image during his World War II service

him. Suddenly, everything changed. "Then, almost magically, the theorems started to come to me. I fell to work eagerly," he remembered.

Bradley served in the United States Army during World War I, but never saw combat. Disappointed, he feared that his career in the army had suffered irreparable damage. Although the interwar years were difficult, he survived in the peacetime military, moving with his wife, Mary, first to Montana, and later Iowa.



General Omar Bradley (centre) converses with a group of fellow army officers during a wartime gathering

"OMAHA BEACH... WAS A NIGHTMARE,' BRADLEY LATER WROTE. 'EVEN NOW IT BRINGS PAIN TO RECALL WHAT HAPPENED THERE'"

He graduated from the Command and General Staff School at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, and taught mathematics at West Point. But as war ravaged Europe, he was promoted to Brigadier General in February 1941, and commanded the Army Infantry School at Fort Benning, Georgia. In 1942, he took command of the 82nd Infantry Division and then the 28th Division. The 82nd was later designated an airborne division and achieved lasting fame in World War II.

Bradley earned a reputation as superb administrator and subordinate to General Eisenhower, and when the army's performance during its first encounters with the German enemy in North Africa was disappointing he was dispatched to the theatre to observe and report on the situation. The new leader of the US II Corps, General George S Patton, offered him the position of Deputy Commander. Bradley rose to command II Corps in spring 1943 and led American forces during the final push to victory in Tunisia. He landed with the corps on the beaches at Gela, Sicily, and conducted a tough campaign, capturing the city of Messina.

As the pace of D-Day planning quickened, Eisenhower chose Bradley to lead American ground forces into Normandy, subordinate to overall ground commander, British General Bernard Law Montgomery. After the near catastrophe at Omaha Beach, Bradley led American forces in the Normandy Campaign, and with a realignment of the command structure he was named commander of the 12th Army Group. Allied troops faced a stubborn enemy and difficult terrain in the hedgerow country of Normandy, and Bradley's most significant contribution to the Allied breakout was his formulation of a plan dubbed



General Omar Bradley, commanding 12 Army Corps, stands with General J Lawton Collins, a corps commander, near Cherbourg, France

Operation Cobra. Launched 25 July 1944, Cobra involved saturation bombing of German frontline positions followed by a rapid ground exploitation of the resulting breach. The plan was successful, and American troops streamed across France. Ironically, General Patton, once Bradley's superior, became his subordinate and led Third Army in an epic cross-country dash.

Bradley guided operations to the west bank of the Rhine River and into Germany itself. He has been criticised in some quarters for an apparent slowness to close the gap at Falaise in Normandy, allowing thousands of German troops to retreat and fight another day. However, analysts are divided as to the veracity of his tactical decisions relating to the movement. He was temporarily sidelined during the great Battle of the Bulge and protested loudly to Eisenhower when his 1st



Eisenhower and Bradley pass under the Arc de Triomphe

and 9th armies were put under Montgomery's command for a time due to the exigencies of the battlefield. Nevertheless, Bradley emerged from World War II as one of America's greatest heroes. His reputation for concern for the lowly foot soldier was largely due to the positive portrayal he received in print from famed war correspondent Ernie Pyle. An officer once remarked that no matter to whom he directed an order, Bradley never failed to say "please".

Bradley was analytical, polite, and usually soft spoken, but he was capable of angry outbursts. He was also willing to make tough decisions related to the capabilities and aptitude of his subordinates, even when the outcome might be detrimental to the career of longtime friends. After World War II, Bradley was asked to lead the Veterans' Administration,

which was inundated with claims for insurance, college, and other benefits mandated by the 1944 GI Bill. The agency was a model of dysfunction and inefficiency until Bradley whipped it into shape during his two-year term from 1945 to 1947.

He went on to serve as Chief of Staff of the Army from 1948 to 1949 and as the first Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff from 1949 to 1953. He received his fifth star and promotion to General of the Army in 1950.

While a five-star general never technically retired, Bradley headed a commission on veterans' pension compensation during the mid-1950s and served as chairman of the board of the Bulova Watch Company from 1958 to 1973. Bradley's wife, Mary, died in December 1965, and he married former

correspondent, Dora 'Kitty' Buhler, with whom he was rumoured to have had an affair, in the autumn of 1966. During periods of ill health, Kitty kept him active as much as possible, and the couple served as consultants for the Academy Award-winning motion picture *Patton*, which debuted in 1970. Actor Karl Malden portrayed Bradley on the big screen.

Two biographies, *A Soldier's Story* (1951) and *A General's Life: An Autobiography* (1983) were co-written with former aide Chester B 'Chet' Hanson and author Clay Blair. The latter was completed and published after Bradley's death at the age of 88 on 8 April 1981.

Following his death, the general left behind a legacy of quiet determination and honourable service. He is buried in Arlington National Cemetery in Virginia.



BRADLEY AND KITTY

Esther 'Kitty' Buhler married Omar Bradley 16 years after the two met, bringing energy and purpose to the general's life

General Omar Bradley's second wife, Esther 'Kitty' Buhler, was a correspondent and screenwriter whose work included scripts for the 1960s television comedy *My Three Sons*. She and General Bradley met on the Pacific island of Okinawa in 1950 as she interviewed him for United Press International. After they married in 1966, the couple settled in Beverly Hills, California, where they enjoyed horse racing and college football. During the 1960s, Bradley served as one of the 'Wise Men', a collection of advisors to President Lyndon Johnson. Health issues emerged, but Kitty worked with him to maintain physical capabilities as much as possible

and arranged for a working relationship with various print media, also putting together the deal for the general to serve as a consultant on the film *Patton*.

Friends credited Kitty with helping the general to maintain some vigor in his later years. However, by the 1970s his failing health required a move to Fort Bliss, Texas, where the climate was favourable and medical care was readily available. After the general died, Kitty worked as a freelance writer living in Century City and Rancho Mirage, California. She was also involved in Republican Party politics. She died in 2004 and was buried at Arlington National cemetery beside the general and his first wife, Mary.



An army officer escorts Kitty during the funeral for her husband, General of the Army Omar Bradley



General Matthew Ridgway often wore hand grenades attached to his combat uniform for easy access in action



MATTHEW RIDGWAY

DYNAMIC AIRBORNE COMMANDER

Commanding the 82nd Airborne Division and XVIII Airborne Corps in World War II, Ridgway went on to lead Eighth Army forces in Korea

YEARS ACTIVE: 1917-1955
CONFLICTS: WWI, WWII, KOREAN WAR
RANK: GENERAL

He was a soldier's soldier: tough, physically fit, and courageous – and he was willing to jump out of an aeroplane and earn his paratrooper wings at age 47.

When Major General Matthew B Ridgway took command of the 82nd Airborne Division in August 1942, most of his subordinates believed he was a “leg”. He had never made a parachute jump, and they expected him to remain on the ground for the duration of his command. Ridgway proved them wrong. First, though, he had to complete the transition of the 82nd, an infantry division with a distinguished combat record during World War I, to the first airborne division in the US Army.

Although the 82nd received only about one-third of the training Ridgway thought was necessary, his task was completed rapidly in preparation for deployment in World War II. Then, he completed his own airborne training, qualified as a paratrooper, and led his command into battle.

Raised as a proverbial “army brat,” Matthew B Ridgway was born at Fort Monroe, Virginia, on 3 March 1895. His father, Colonel Thomas Ridgway, was an officer in the artillery, and

the family moved from post to post across the United States.

During his early years, Matthew had no interest in pursuing a military career; however, his attitude changed after graduation from high school in 1912. He decided to pursue an appointment to the US Military Academy at West Point, believing it would please his father. Still, he was ill prepared for the mathematics section of the competitive examination. He failed. True to form, he redoubled his efforts, took the test a second time, and was appointed to the Academy in the spring of 1913.

Ridgway was an average performer at West Point and narrowly avoided ending his military career before it began. After falling from a horse, he was left with a back injury that caused severe bouts of pain that periodically incapacitated him for the rest of his life. He graduated in 1917 as a Second Lieutenant, and while the world was at war he was posted to the US border with Mexico, as a Junior Officer of the 3rd Infantry Regiment. Like other officers who never reached the battlefields of World War I, including Generals Dwight Eisenhower and Omar Bradley, Ridgway chafed, believing his career would be impacted negatively. He spent

the balance of the Great War as a Spanish instructor at West Point and brooded.

Ridgway was promoted to Captain in the summer of 1919, but elevation in rank was slow in the peacetime army, and he remained in that grade for 13 years. During the 1920s, he underwent infantry training at Fort Benning, Georgia, and commanded the 15th Infantry Regiment in Tientsin, China. By 1927, he was commanding troops in Nicaragua. He contracted malaria in Central America but was well enough to take a posting as advisor to the Philippines' Governor General in 1930.

At long last, Ridgway was promoted to Major in the autumn of 1932. He had graduated from the US Army Command and General Staff School and the US Army War College by 1937 and subsequently held positions at corps and army level. His big break came in late 1939, when Army Chief of Staff General George C Marshall summoned him to Washington, DC to work in the War Plans Division of the War Department. In January 1942, weeks after the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor plunged the US into World War II, he was promoted to Brigadier General and became second in command of the 82nd during its transition.



A GIANT STEP BACK

General Ridgway firmly opposed an ill-conceived airborne operation to capture Rome, put his career on the line, and was vindicated

On the eve of the Allied invasion of the Italy in September 1943, a bold airborne stroke to capture Rome, the Eternal City, with Italian support was proposed. Senior Allied officers were enthusiastic, but when word reached General Matthew Ridgway, commander of the 82nd Airborne Division, whose 504th Parachute Infantry Regiment was to pull it off, his take was decidedly different. Ridgway believed the mission, codenamed Giant II, was doomed and said so, earning the ire of General Walter Bedell Smith, chief of staff of General Dwight Eisenhower, Mediterranean Theatre commander. Ridgway thought assurances that Allied troops would reach Rome within five days were preposterous and risked his military career to oppose an operation he believed would destroy much of his division.

Ridgway's concerns were confirmed when his artillery chief, General Maxwell Taylor, and intelligence officer Colonel William T Gardiner took a hazardous fact-finding foray into Rome. They discovered the Italians had backed off their commitment to assist, fearing German reprisal. Neither airfields 25 miles from Rome nor supporting Italian infantry were guaranteed. Instead of the two German infantry battalions intelligence had said were in the area, two panzergrenadier divisions were near the city. Obviously, the operation would fail. Taylor flashed the message, "Situation Innocuous" to suspend Giant II, which was later cancelled.

Ridgway's conviction saved lives. Planes were halted moments before takeoff. When the crisis passed, Ridgway sat down with Colonel Ralph Eaton. The two wept over a bottle of whiskey. Eaton remembered that after Ridgway moved on he "sat there thinking that I owed him my life."



Showing concern for his men as he did in Italy, General Matthew Ridgway visits wounded soldiers in a Korean field hospital

When General Bradley left the 82nd to run the 28th Infantry Division that summer, Ridgway was promoted to major general and given command of the 82nd.

In the spring of 1943, the 82nd Airborne Division deployed to North Africa, which was the staging area for Operation Husky, the upcoming invasion of Sicily. Although airborne operations had been conducted during the North Africa campaign, Sicily would be the scene of the first



Troopers of the 82nd Airborne Division rest in the village of Sainte-Mere-Eglise in Normandy on D-Day, 6 June 1944

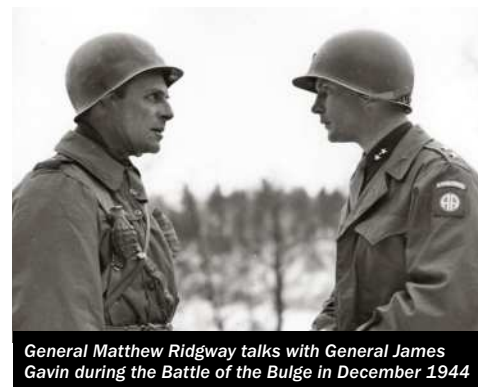
“RIDGWAY WAS EULOGISED BY COLIN POWELL, WHO SAID, ‘NO SOLDIER EVER PERFORMED HIS DUTY BETTER THAN THIS MAN’”

large-scale airborne combat drop in US history. Ridgway was deeply involved in the planning for Husky, but the operation encountered difficulties from the beginning.

Colonel James M Gavin, commanding the 505th Parachute Infantry Regiment, remembered that on the night of 9-10 July 1943, he never saw the homing beacon on the island of Malta that marked a turn for the transport aircraft. High winds buffeted the planes and their human cargoes. Some were simply lost. When the paratroopers began jumping, the winds scattered them across more than 60 miles of southeastern Sicily. Nevertheless, they carried out their missions and assisted the troops on the landing beaches during their move inland.

On the night of 11 July, the 504th Parachute Infantry Regiment was slated to drop into Sicily to reinforce elements of General George S Patton's Seventh Army. The invasion beach at Gela was a beehive of activity. Throughout the day, German air attacks had disrupted efforts to put men and materiel ashore, and the antiaircraft gunners were undoubtedly nervous. Senior commanders were worried about the prospects of friendly fire, and messages were sent to warn Army and Navy personnel along the flight line that an airborne operation was coming. Ridgway personally visited a number of antiaircraft gun crews to ensure that they had received the message. Some had not, but the mission went forward.

When the transport planes droned overhead, tragically, a gunner aboard one of the cargo ships opened fire. Then another, and another. When it was finally over, one of the worst instances of friendly fire in World War II had



General Matthew Ridgway talks with General James Gavin during the Battle of the Bulge in December 1944

resulted in 23 transport planes shot down and a further 37 were damaged. More than 400 men were dead. Ridgway was appalled. Operation Husky was supposed to be followed by airborne operations in Italy, coming after the main Allied landings on the coast of the Tyrrhenian Sea in September 1943. Ridgway frowned on the proposed airborne assault, codenamed Giant II, to capture Rome, and fortuitously the operation was cancelled.

Then came the greatest airborne test of World War II. The 82nd Airborne Division joined the 101st and the British 6th Airborne Divisions in the opening phase of Operation Overlord, the Allied invasion of Nazi-occupied Europe. The airborne troops were to hold the flanks of the five invasion beaches, secure causeways and exits from the beaches and facilitate the advance of ground forces. The 82nd performed admirably, but in 33 days of combat experienced 46 per cent casualties – more than 5,000 men killed, wounded or captured.

Still, the 82nd Airborne remained active. Replacements were absorbed, training continued, and when Ridgway was promoted to command the XVIII Airborne Corps in



General Matthew Ridgway rides behind General Douglas MacArthur, whom he succeeded as commander of United Nations forces in Korea

the summer of 1944, Colonel James M Gavin took over the 82nd. Subsequently, Ridgway's command took part in Operation Market-Garden, a combined air/ground offensive into Holland that failed to achieve a permanent bridgehead across the Lower Rhine and into Germany, in September 1944. When the Germans launched their Ardennes Offensive that December, the 82nd and 101st Airborne Divisions were rushed into action at Werbomont on the north shoulder of the 'Bulge' and the key crossroads town of Bastogne, where they stood their ground and helped turn the enemy back. In spring 1945, the XVIII Airborne Corps executed Operation Varsity, the airborne crossing of the great Rhine River in Germany and remains to be the largest effort of its kind to date.

Ridgway transferred to the Pacific after the war in Europe ended. He briefly commanded

troops in the Philippines, and served as Military Governor of Japan. After the war, he commanded US forces in the Mediterranean and the Caribbean and served as deputy to Army Chief of Staff General Joseph Lawton Collins. Previously divorced twice, he married Mary Anthony Long in 1947, and they were together until his death in 1993. They had one son, Matthew, Junior, who was killed in an accident in 1971 shortly after receiving a commission as a second lieutenant.

In 1950, Ridgway was sent to Korea to take command of the US Eighth Army after General Walton Walker died in a Jeep accident. He restored the morale of his command and turned the tide of the Korean War with victories at Chipyong-ni and Wonju. In April 1951, President Harry S Truman named him to succeed General Douglas MacArthur as commander of all US and United Nations forces in Korea. He planned

and launched a strong counteroffensive against the North Korean and Chinese forces that regained territory occupied by the communists.

Ridgway succeeded Eisenhower as supreme Allied commander in Europe for the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO). He served a term as Army Chief of Staff and regularly opposed then-President Eisenhower over military policy. He retired from the Army in 1955, served as chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Mellon Institute and as a director of Gulf Oil Corporation, and wrote two books, *Soldier: The Memoirs of Matthew B Ridgway* and *The Korean War*.

When he died at age 98 on 26 July 1993, Ridgway was eulogised by General Colin Powell, Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, who said, "No soldier ever performed his duty better than this man..." The general was buried in Arlington National Cemetery.



RIDGWAY IN NORMANDY

General Matthew Ridgway often led from the front when his troopers parachuted into harm's way

After parachuting into a field near the Merderet River in Normandy during the predawn hours of 6 June 1944, D-Day, General Matthew Ridgway was one of many American troopers who did not know exactly where they were. He knew that his 82nd Airborne Division was scattered across much of Normandy, far from its assigned drop zones. To make matters worse, the general still felt the effects of malaria he had contracted in Nicaragua two decades earlier, along with a recurrence of back pain due to an injury during his West Point days.

Nevertheless, there was work to be done. The 82nd had to support the inland advance of the US

4th Infantry Division from Utah Beach. Ridgway inspired his men, who achieved objectives despite their difficulties, with tremendous courage and leadership. In just one example, while the Germans stoutly defended a causeway at La Fiere, Ridgway and assistant division commander General James Gavin stood up as enemy 88mm shells exploded around them, assessed the situation, and led the way forward. Still under enemy fire, Ridgway personally attached a towing line to a tank that had been crippled and blocked the road ahead. Common soldiers watched in awe – but then Ridgway was an extraordinary man.



General Matthew Ridgway greets General Dwight Eisenhower in Europe in 1945. At the time, Ridgway commanded the XVIII Airborne Corps



Wearing desert camouflage combat fatigues, General Norman Schwarzkopf emerged from the 1991 Gulf War as a hero



NORMAN SCHWARZKOPF

THE STORM CENTRE

General Norman Schwarzkopf led the coalition forces that ejected the Iraqi Army from Kuwait during Operation Desert Storm and became an international hero

YEARS ACTIVE: 1956-1991
CONFLICTS: VIETNAM WAR, INVASION OF GRENADA, OPERATION DESERT STORM
RANK: GENERAL

He was admired by most observers, both military and civilian. He was decisive, a bold strategist and tactician who applied lessons learned throughout his career.

And he was accomplished in dealing with the media. But his temper could be fiery, and he earned the nickname 'Stormin' Norman'.

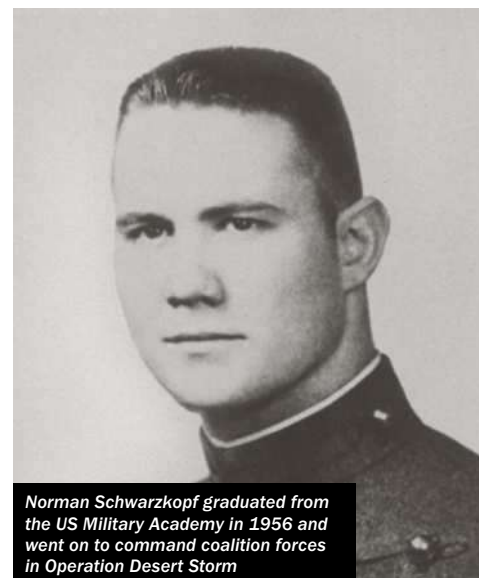
General Herbert Norman Schwarzkopf Junior spent 35 years on active duty with the US Army and led a multi-national force of 750,000 soldiers along with a legion of naval and air force personnel to victory in the Gulf War of 1990-91. His remarkable victory, liberating Kuwait from the Iraqi forces of dictator Saddam Hussein, featured an extended strategic air campaign that preceded a spectacular 100-hour ground assault. The extraordinary feat of arms made Schwarzkopf America's first high-profile battlefield command hero in more than a generation.

Schwarzkopf was born into a military family in Trenton, New Jersey, on 22 August 1934. His father, Brigadier General Herbert Norman Schwarzkopf Senior, was a 1917 graduate of the US Military Academy at West Point,

New York, while his mother, Ruth Alice Bowman Schwarzkopf of West Virginia, was a distant relative of Founding Father Thomas Jefferson. Prior to their son's birth, the elder Schwarzkopf had retired from the military and worked with the New Jersey State Police. Among the cases he pursued was that of the infamous kidnapping and murder of the Lindbergh baby, the son of celebrated pioneer aviator Charles Lindbergh. In early 1942, as the US mobilised for World War II, Schwarzkopf Senior returned to active service in the Army.

Young Norman attended Bordentown Military Institute near his hometown, and after the war accompanied his family abroad as his father accepted several foreign postings. In 1946, the family moved to Iran, where Norman became acquainted with Middle Eastern culture, its complexity and diversity. The following year, the family relocated to Geneva, Switzerland. Assignments in Germany ensued, with Norman attending American secondary schools there. By 1951, the family had moved to Iran a second time. After returning to the US, Norman finished secondary school at Valley Forge Military Academy in Pennsylvania.

In 1952, Schwarzkopf entered West Point, where he played football, wrestled and sang with the chapel choir, sometimes directing. His physical stature – six feet, three inches tall (1.91 metres) and 240 pounds (110 kilograms) – was an asset in athletic competition. Highly intelligent, his IQ was measured at 168. He



Norman Schwarzkopf graduated from the US Military Academy in 1956 and went on to command coalition forces in Operation Desert Storm



Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff General Colin Powell, right, talks with General Norman Schwarzkopf during Operation Desert Shield

graduated in 1956, standing 43rd in a class of 480. He later returned to college and obtained a master's degree in mechanical and aerospace engineering from the University of Southern California (USC).

Assigned to the infantry, 2nd Lieutenant Schwarzkopf attended the Infantry School at Fort Benning, Georgia, also completing the course as a qualified parachutist in the spring of 1957. He was then ordered to Fort Campbell, Kentucky, for duty as a platoon leader and company executive officer in the 101st Airborne Division. Two years later he was sent to Germany, serving in several roles with the 6th Infantry Division, including duty with the Berlin Brigade facing off against Soviet guards along the city's demarcation line.

Promoted to captain in 1961, Schwarzkopf returned to Fort Benning and completed the

Advanced Infantry School while obtaining his master's parachute certification. By June 1964, he had completed his advanced studies at USC and was teaching engineering courses at West Point. However, the deepening US involvement in Vietnam compelled him to volunteer for combat duty. By early 1965, he was "in country", initially serving as an advisor to the Army of the Republic of Vietnam (ARVN) Airborne Division. He experienced hostile fire for the first time in August of that year at Pleiku while advising South Vietnamese airborne troops in support of an infantry operation.

Schwarzkopf remained on combat duty in Vietnam for ten months, displaying personal

courage on numerous occasions, and was then assigned as a senior staff advisor to the ARVN Airborne Division. Obligated to complete his commitment as a West Point instructor, he returned to the academy in late 1966. Three years later, Major Schwarzkopf completed the Command and General Staff College at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas. He was promoted to lieutenant colonel and ordered back to Vietnam.

During the interim, the young officer attended a West Point football game in the autumn of 1967 and was introduced to Brenda Holsinger, a flight attendant with Trans World Airlines (TWA). The couple married the next year and eventually had three children, born between 1970 and 1977.

When he returned to Vietnam, Schwarzkopf observed a considerable change in the political and military atmosphere. The North Vietnamese Army and Viet Cong insurgency had launched the Tet Offensive in January 1968, and though the operation was a military failure, the widespread media coverage it received in the US, along with the stark realisation that the communist enemy was capable of launching guerrilla attacks across South Vietnam at a time and place of its choosing, caused the illusion of an imminent American/South Vietnamese victory to evaporate. The US was developing an exit strategy called 'Vietnamisation', but half a million American troops were still in the country.

Leading a battalion of the 198th Infantry Brigade, he whipped a lethargic unit, plagued by drug use, discipline issues and disillusionment, into shape. At the same time, Lieutenant Colonel Schwarzkopf referred to rear areas

"HE GAINED A REPUTATION FOR FIGHTING ALONGSIDE HIS MEN, RATHER THAN FROM THE SAFETY OF A DISTANT BUNKER"



SCHWARZKOPF IN COMBAT

While serving in Vietnam as a young officer, Norman Schwarzkopf displayed personal courage under fire on numerous occasions

As a leader of men in war, Norman Schwarzkopf believed in being up front. During the Vietnam War, he had the opportunity to demonstrate that conviction on several occasions at the risk of his own life.

During his first combat experience, on 3 August 1965, Schwarzkopf led a contingent of South Vietnamese paratroopers into action. The unit absorbed heavy casualties, fighting several days until another force moved forward to drive the enemy away. When several South Vietnamese soldiers lay wounded and under enemy fire, Schwarzkopf leaped to their rescue, pulling them to safety. He received the Silver Star for his courage.

Six months later, as his paratroopers assaulted a North Vietnamese position, Schwarzkopf was wounded four times. He refused to give up

command or seek medical treatment until the objective was captured. For that incident, he received a second Silver Star and the Purple Heart. His wounds required a body cast from the waist up.

On 28 May 1970, Schwarzkopf observed a group of soldiers that had wandered into a minefield. He ordered a helicopter to land and bring out the wounded. Another soldier stepped on a mine, breaking his leg. When the man panicked, Schwarzkopf held him to the ground as the others continued their escape. While the broken leg was being splinted, another mine exploded. Three men were killed and his artillery officer was wounded. That incident, among others, haunted Schwarzkopf for the rest of his life. When his tours in Vietnam were over, he had received three Silver Stars and two Purple Hearts.



In this 1965 photo, future General Schwarzkopf helps a wounded South Vietnamese soldier to an aid station



Discussing terms of cease-fire during Operation Desert Storm, General Norman Schwarzkopf takes the measure of two Iraqi generals

as “cesspools” of staff and command incompetence. He preferred to stay near the front lines and gained a reputation for fighting alongside his men rather than directing operations from the safety of a distant bunker. He admired the sacrifice of the men under his command, and his smouldering temper was stoked once during a heated radio conversation as he implored passing helicopters to land and evacuate his wounded men.

The Vietnam experience and subsequent treatment of the war’s veterans soured Schwarzkopf, but he stayed in the Army. Slowed by back problems probably related to parachute jumps, he underwent surgery following his return to the US, then, throughout the 1970s, he was stationed in Alaska and Fort Lewis, Washington, where he commanded the 1st Brigade, 9th Infantry Division, his leadership resulting in excellent evaluations of combat readiness. He was promoted to brigadier general in 1978, prior to relocating to Hawaii as deputy director of planning for US Pacific Command, before transferring to Germany to be assistant commander of the 8th Infantry Division (Mechanized), and then to Washington, DC as the Army’s director of personnel management.

After promotion to major general, he was given command of the 24th Infantry Division (Mechanized) at Fort Stewart, Georgia. His reputation as a demanding leader being enhanced as a relentless regimen of training was implemented and the general barked orders at those who were slow to respond.

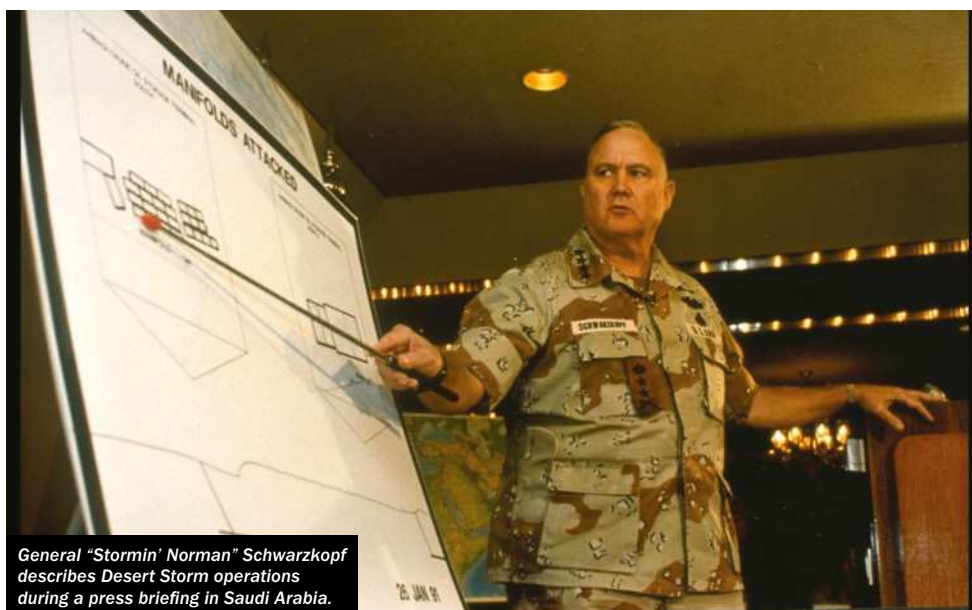
In October 1983, when a pro-Marxist coup backed by the Cuban government occurred on the Caribbean island of Grenada, the US

military committed to its largest deployment of combat assets since the Vietnam War. Schwarzkopf was appointed deputy commander under Vice Admiral Joseph Metcalf III, who led the command group that developed plans for an invasion of Grenada to restore lawful government, as well as quash attempts by the Grenadan revolutionaries to construct an airfield that might be used to fly supplies to other leftist guerrillas in Central America, and protect American nationals who were attending a medical school on the island.

Schwarzkopf’s appointment as deputy commander actually occurred late in the planning phase, and he was unable to correct a number of deficiencies in the operation, including communications and logistics troubles, plus a debilitating interservice rivalry.

In one extreme situation, a US Marine colonel had refused to fly Army combat troops to their deployment position on Marine helicopters. The incident enraged Schwarzkopf, who initially monitored the operation from the amphibious assault ship USS Guam. He then flew to the town of St. George’s on the second day, and the mission was brought to a successful conclusion.

Although there were frustrating moments during the Grenada operation, the experience was valuable for Schwarzkopf, who understood the need for better interservice cooperation to ensure success. He gained substantial working knowledge of the Marine and Navy forces that would one day come under his operational command in the Middle East. By July 1985, he was back in Washington, DC serving as deputy



General “Stormin’ Norman” Schwarzkopf describes Desert Storm operations during a press briefing in Saudi Arabia.



THE LUCKIEST MAN IN IRAQ

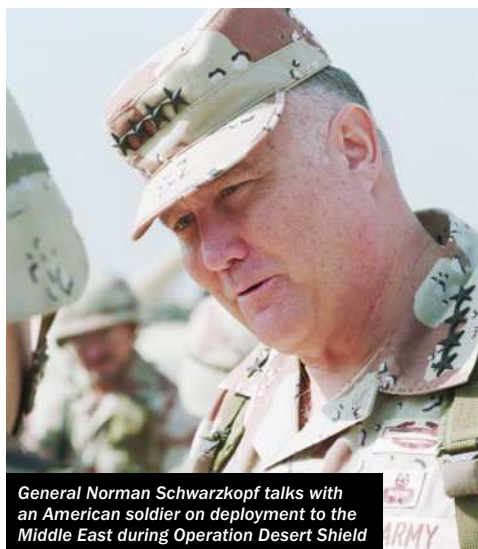
An Iraqi truck driver proved that timing is everything, narrowly avoiding a violent death during an American airstrike

General Norman Schwarzkopf, commander of coalition forces during Operation Desert Storm, conducted regular briefings with the media during the course of the Gulf War. His comments were highly quotable and entertaining as he discussed recent operations and described the fantastic array of technology on display. During one eventful conference, he asked reporters to view a video clip.

"I'm now going to show you a picture of the luckiest man in Iraq," he smiled. "Keep your eye on the crosshairs," he said, as an Iraqi bridge appeared on the monitor. A truck came into view, and the driver started to cross the span while the pilot of an American aircraft initiated his attack on the target. The truck started across the bridge and sped to the other side, passing through the patient pilot's aiming device. "And now, in his rear-view mirror..." Schwarzkopf grinned. The pilot had released his ordnance, right on target. The bridge erupted in a ball of smoke, flame and debris. The truck driver, however, had safely crossed – alive by the slimmest of margins. It was an outstanding example of Schwarzkopf's showmanship and deft handling of a hungry press corps, American precision technology, and the hand of fate that spared one man's life in wartime.



During one of his legendary Gulf War press briefings, delivered in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia, General Norman Schwarzkopf points to a television monitor



General Norman Schwarzkopf talks with an American soldier on deployment to the Middle East during Operation Desert Shield



General Norman Schwarzkopf talks to four Marines in desert camouflage before fighting begins in Iraq

"SCHWARZKOPF UTILISED HIS KNOWLEDGE OF MIDDLE EASTERN PEOPLES AND THEIR CUSTOMS TO DISTINCT ADVANTAGE"

chief of staff for operations and plans, and on 1 July 1986, he was promoted to three-star lieutenant general rank. In 1988, he was promoted to four-star full general and appointed to lead United States Central Command (CENTCOM), headquartered at MacDill Air Force Base in Tampa, Florida, with responsibility for combat readiness in the Middle East and 200,000 service personnel in 19 countries.

CENTCOM had long been focused on the threat of a Soviet invasion of the Middle East through Iran, but that concern was diminished as the Soviet Union teetered on the verge of collapse in the late 1980s. Instead, Schwarzkopf saw the threat of a regional conflict in the Middle East as a more likely occurrence. His concern was prescient, and as the bloody eight-year Iran-Iraq War came to a tenuous conclusion, the probability of continuing instability in the region became all too real. Schwarzkopf identified the Iraqi regime of Ba'athist dictator Saddam Hussein and an invasion of neighbouring Kuwait or Saudi Arabia as the likely flashpoint. To that end, military exercises were conducted and scenarios studied to formulate an effective response to such an event.

Incredibly, on 2 August 1990, one week after extensive exercises were completed, Iraq invaded Kuwait. Iraqi forces seized oil fields, captured the capital of Kuwait City, and committed numerous atrocities, terrorising the Kuwaiti civilian population in the process.

In response to Saddam Hussein's overt aggression, President George W Bush appealed to the rest of the world, and a broad,

international military coalition, supported by the United Nations, emerged. Schwarzkopf took command of the coalition military forces as the build-up of air, ground and naval assets grew to astounding proportions during the autumn and winter of 1990. Schwarzkopf worked with Secretary of Defense Dick Cheney and Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff General Colin Powell to gain the trust of Saudi King Fahd so that American and coalition troops could use Saudi territory and bases as staging areas for the protection of that nation and the conduct of a counter-offensive to expel the Iraqis from Kuwait. Schwarzkopf utilised his knowledge of Middle Eastern peoples and their customs to distinct advantage in the effort.

Some observers have criticised the prolonged build-up of forces that occurred in the Middle East, dubbed Operation Desert Shield, prior to the launch of the coalition offensive. However, it is likely that Schwarzkopf intended to mass unquestionably sufficient military might to win a swift war rather than prosecuting a long, costly campaign characterised by a gradually growing commitment, as had been waged in Vietnam. In the end, he was proven correct.

After nearly five months of politics, planning and logistical positioning, the coalition air campaign against Iraqi ground forces was launched on 17 January 1991. While US, British, French and Saudi aircraft, as well as some from other nations, pounded Iraqi targets in Kuwait, Schwarzkopf maintained a close relationship with the media. Conducting daily briefings, he proved a master of the intended

message. Reporters were shown videos of airstrikes, while the general elaborated on operations and technological capabilities to deliver a confident, war-winning message to the American people and to the world. His persona grew nearly larger than life. But the finest coalition hour was still to come.

In a 1991 speech at West Point, General Schwarzkopf told his audience, "True courage is being afraid, and going ahead and doing your job anyhow. That's what courage is." As the ground war loomed, he did all in his power to minimise casualties that might occur with the offensive. With the capable aid of deputies such as Army Generals Calvin Waller and William Pagonis and Lieutenant General Charles Horner of the US Air Force, the ground phase was ready for action by mid-February. Meanwhile, Schwarzkopf and his primary coalition partners, General Peter de la Billière commanding British forces and General Michel Roquejeoffre leading the French, forged a strong operational partnership.

Heeding a lesson of history, Schwarzkopf patterned his operational conduct after that of British Field Marshal Bernard Montgomery at the epic desert Battle of El Alamein in World War II. On 24 February, he unleashed the ground campaign. Arab forces struck directly across the Saudi frontier toward Kuwait City, while US Marines fixed the defenders with an amphibious feint off the coast and captured oil production facilities. Meanwhile, the light forces of the XVIII Airborne Corps seized

tactical positions to the north-west and the heavy firepower of the VII Corps, including large numbers of troops, artillery and main battle tanks, executed a massive left hook, or 'Hail Mary', manoeuvre to cut off the retreat of Iraqi forces northward and destroy those attempting to enter the fray from the west.

In the dazzling 100-hour campaign, coalition forces destroyed more than 40 Iraqi divisions, including the VII Corps decimation of the vaunted Iraqi Republican Guard units. Resistance was lighter than expected, and Iraqi soldiers surrendered in droves. Iraqi armour was obliterated by fixed-wing aircraft and tank-killing Apache helicopters. Although Schwarzkopf and the coalition military establishment had expected a campaign of several weeks' duration with heavy casualties, the effort resulted in fewer than 500 killed and about 460 wounded – and a portion of those were due to errant friendly fire.

General Schwarzkopf returned to the United States a hero, having masterminded a remarkably successful military campaign. He was honoured with a parade down Broadway in New York City, received the Presidential Medal of Freedom, and was later knighted by Queen Elizabeth II. He was asked to lead the Joint Chiefs of Staff and to run for political office, possibly even for the presidency, but declined.

Choosing retirement in the summer of 1991, he later worked briefly as an analyst for NBC News, championed the return of the grizzly bear from the endangered species list, and

supported numerous charities, particularly several related to children. He wrote his memoirs, titled *It Doesn't Take A Hero*, and became a proficient and well-received public speaker. He was critical of the 2003 US-led invasion of Iraq, concerned with a perceived lack of training of American reserve troops before they were deployed to combat zones.

Remembered as a man of exceptional talent, General Schwarzkopf ranks as the most significant American military hero since the Korean War of the 1950s. After years of active and enjoyable retirement, he died in Tampa on 27 December 2012 at the age of 78.



AN ELOQUENT COMBAT VETERAN

When General Norman Schwarzkopf spoke to journalists, he was forthright in assessing the military and the sting of combat

Norman Schwarzkopf witnessed both valour and ineptitude during two deployments in war-torn Vietnam. In 1971, he agreed to sit down with author and journalist CDB Bryan for an interview. Using the pseudonym of Lieutenant Colonel Byron Schindler, he was frank in his assessment of the war, telling Bryan, "War is a profanity, it really is. It's terrifying. Nobody is more anti-war than an intelligent person who's been to war. Probably the most anti-war people I know are Army officers. But if we do have a war, I think it's going to be limited in nature like Vietnam and Korea. Limited in scope. And when they get ready to send me again, I'm going to have to stop and ask myself, 'Is it worth it?' That's a very dangerous place for the nation to be when your own army is going to stop and question."

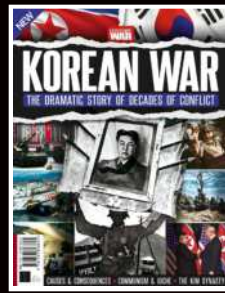
General Schwarzkopf never forgot the grip of fear and surge of courage that marked his combat experience. After the Gulf War victory in 1991, he bluntly told ABC News correspondent Barbara Walters, "It doesn't take a hero to order men into battle. It takes a hero to be one of those men who goes into battle."



Marching down a trail toward Pleiku, US military advisor Schwarzkopf leads South Vietnamese soldiers



After being knighted by Queen Elizabeth II in 1991, General Norman Schwarzkopf talks with the monarch



Discover how the greatest empires in history were forged



Explore the spellbinding world of sorcery, spells and shamanic trances

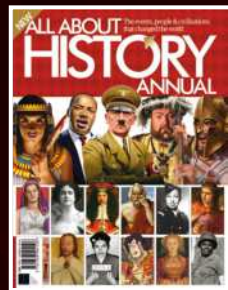
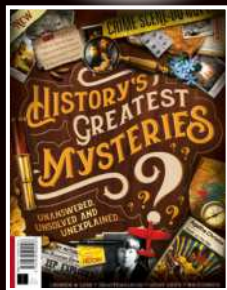
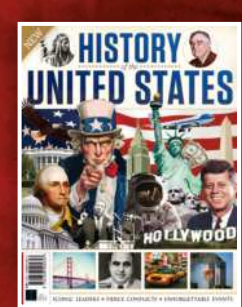
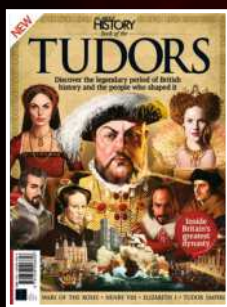


Chart the rise of Hitler and learn how he set Germany on the path to war



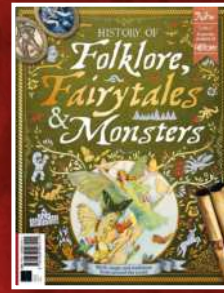
Get great savings when you buy direct from us



1000s of great titles, many not available anywhere else

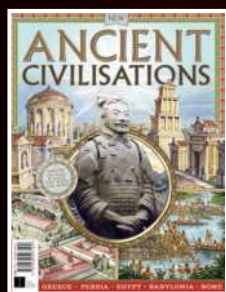
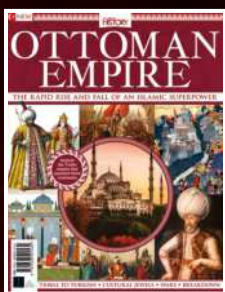
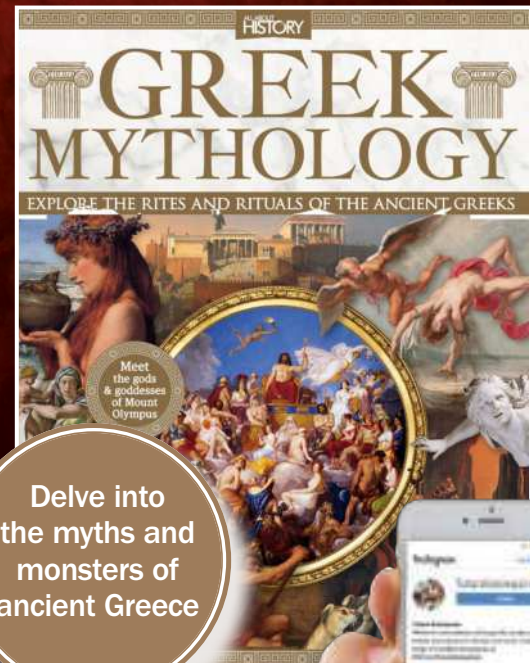


World-wide delivery and super-safe ordering



STEP BACK IN TIME WITH OUR HISTORY TITLES

Immerse yourself in a world of emperors, pioneers, conquerors and legends and discover the events that shaped humankind



Delve into the myths and monsters of ancient Greece

Follow us on Instagram  @futurebookazines



www.magazinesdirect.com

Magazines, back issues & bookazines.



SUBSCRIBE & SAVE UP TO 61%

Delivered direct to your door
or straight to your device



Choose from over 80 magazines and make great savings off the store price!

Binders, books and back issues also available

Simply visit www.magazinesdirect.com

✓ No hidden costs 🚚 Shipping included in all prices 🌐 We deliver to over 100 countries 🔒 Secure online payment



magazinesdirect.com
Official Magazine Subscription Store

US MILITARY'S GREATEST LEADERS

MEET THE MILITARY HEROES WHO SHAPED
THE WORLD'S LEADING SUPERPOWER



Presidents at War

Explore the military careers of some of the
United States' most iconic presidents



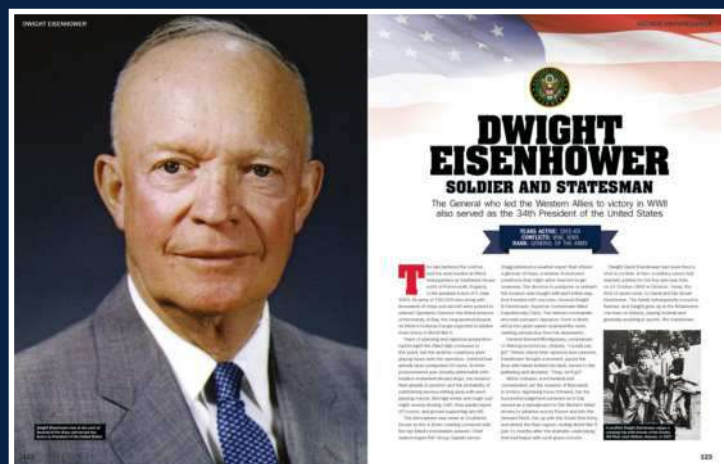
Robert E Lee vs Ulysses S Grant

Uncover the truth about the American Civil War as
two of the nation's greatest generals clash



General Custer vs Crazy Horse

Find out how the Sioux warrior defeated Custer's
army in the Battle of the Little Bighorn



Dwight D Eisenhower

Discover how this future US president helped
lead the Allies to victory in World War II